



Thesis Submitted in Partial Fulfilment of the Requirements for the
Degree of Doctor in Biomedical Sciences

Department of Public Health and Primary Care
Group Biomedical Sciences
Faculty of Medicine
KU Leuven

Data Splitting and its Applications

Vahid NASSIRI

Supervisors:

Geert MOLENBERGHS
Geert VERBEKE

Academic year 2019–2020

DATA SPLITTING AND ITS APPLICATIONS

Vahid NASSIRI

Jury:

Promoter:	Prof. Dr. Geert Molenberghs	Dissertation presented in
Co-promoter:	Prof. Dr. Geert Verbeke	partial fulfilment of the
Chair:	Prof. Dr. Emmanuel Lesaffre	requirements for the
Secretary:	Prof. Dr. Philippe Lemey	degree of Doctor in
Jury members:	Prof. Dr. Helena Geys	Biomedical Sciences
	Prof. Dr. Dimitris Rizopoulos	
	Prof. Dr. Katrijn Van Deun	
	Prof. Dr. Marlies Lacante	
	Prof. Dr. Karl Meerbergen	
	Prof. Dr. Philippe Lemey	

Date: 18 December 2019

To The Memory of My Grandmother, Fatemehnesa Roostaei Tilaki.

PREFACE

First, Xerxes's agents collected ten thousands men in a single place and, having packed them together as close as possible, marked a circle around them. Next, they removed the men, had a dry-wall constructed on this circle, and proceeded to measure the remaining multitudes by herding them successively into this standard ten-thousand troop pen, Hamel (2012).

King Xerxes could ask his agents to count the soldiers one by one. But as Herodotus (Flower et al., 2002) mentioned, there were 1,700,000 men in his army, so it could take a long time to count them one by one. Instead, he counted them in groups of 10,000. That means counting 170 subjects instead of 1,700,000, hence, the counting task could be done a lot faster. Of course, when counting groups of 10,000 in the way

described above, some errors could happen. There is no guarantee that every group of soldiers consists of exactly 10,000 men. However, the approximated estimate is accurate enough considering the time gain.

Our aim in this thesis is to explore this ancient idea:

- splitting a dataset into smaller chunks: 170 groups of 10,000 soldiers,
- analyzing the data in each chunk separately: filling the space within the walls with the soldiers,
- and then combining them to obtain the final results: multiplying the number of packs of 10,000 soldiers by 10,000!

We will show that this idea can speed up analyzing *big data* with little and sometimes negligible loss of efficiency. Considering the topic of my previous thesis (Nassiri, 2013), dealing with high-dimensional data using sparse estimation, the current thesis is also in the same line. While in the previous work we were more concerned on the size of the parameter space, in the current work our interest is in the size of the sample itself. Of course, a large sample could possibly create a large parameter space as well.

What we will present in this manuscript is the result of collaborating with many great people who I had the chance to know and work with during my four years in I-BioStat. Above all, Geert Molenberghs and Geert Verbeke whose advises, ideas, and availability (literally any time

of day or night!) made the current work possible. I would never forget the first day I went to Geert Molenbergh's office, he told me 'FIRST ASK, THEN THINK!'. That sounded a bit strange to me until I realized what he really meant. There are wonderful people in I-BioStat whose expertise can save you a lot of time and solve your problems in a more efficient way. I want to thank these colleagues in particular: Wim Van der Elst, Anna Ivanova, Anikó Lovik, Martial Luyts, Adrian Quintero, Dung Trung Tran, Oludare Samuel Ariyo, Jeroen Sichien, Lisa Hermans, Alvaro Florez Poveda, Kris Bogaerts, and Steffen Fieuws. Also, I want to thank Kirsten Verhaegen for all her efficient helps when I was working in L-Biostat, and even afterwards. There has been people outside of I-BioStat who I had the chance to work with, in particular Pavlos Mamouris, João Barbosa Breda, and Karel van Keer, it was a pleasure to see how the methodologies we develop could answer their questions.

I would like to specially thank Tobias Verbeke, the director of Open Analytics, and all my colleagues there who made it possible for me to still work on my thesis and finish my PhD while working as a statistical consultant at OA. This manuscript could not be written in its current form without their support. I would also thank Bahar Mansoory for proofreading this manuscript, and for her very useful linguistic and non-linguistic comments. I also like to thank Ali Rezayat for all his helps. Furthermore, my many thanks goes to Ignace Loris who had supervised my PhD thesis in Vrije Universiteit Brussel, I have learned a lot from him. Also, I thank Adel Mohammadpour, the supervisor of my master thesis who taught me how to do research and how to enjoy

doing research.

My KU Leuven jury members who have been supporting me since the very first year have a great influence in the direction of my research, also the way our findings are organized and presented. I would like to thank Prof. Marlies Lacante, Prof. Karl Meerbergen, and Prof. Philippe Lemey. I also thank the external jury members, Prof. Helena Geys, Prof. Dimitris Rizopoulos, and Prof. Katrijn Van Deun who have kindly accepted our request to review and evaluate this manuscript. Their careful comments and suggestions have improved our work. I am immensely grateful to Prof. Emmanuel Lesaffre for kindly accepting to chair the PhD defense. I also thank the support of IAP research network, the European Seventh Framework programme FP7, and IWT-SBO Exa Science. Part of the computational resources and services used in this work were provided by the VSC (Flemish Supercomputer Center), funded by the Research Foundation - Flanders (FWO) and the Flemish Government department EWI.

And finally, I would like to thank my family, who despite the 5000 km distance, always support me. I hope I could properly express my gratitude to all these people by preparing this manuscript. Obviously, the responsibility for any shortcoming in this work is fully mine and I would be very thankful if one who finds something kindly let me know via vahid.nassiri@openanalytics.eu.

November, 2019
Vahid Nassiri

SUMMARY

Sample size has always been an issue in statistical analyses. While for many years small sample sizes were a central issue, in recent years, large sample sizes too might confront the statistical analyst with serious problems. When large to huge sample sizes concur with complex models, prohibitive computation times, convergence issues, and the mere impossibility to analyze the data with the preferred inferential technique (e.g., full maximum likelihood) can ensue.

Furthermore, while in the simplest designs all measurements are independent, many designs lead to hierarchical (a.k.a., clustered, correlated, dependent) data. By ‘cluster’ we mean a set of measurements repeatedly collected for one single unit (e.g., subject, household, trial, etc.). Therefore, the number of repetitions refers to the number of measurements

available per cluster. Examples include: patients measured repeatedly over time, several patients attending the same general practitioner or clinic, several links clicked by a specific user, genetic data available for a person, etc. Some important examples of clustered data are repeated measurements, longitudinal data, multi-center studies, and meta-analysis. Accounting for correlations remains a challenge today, when the total number of clusters is large and/or there are a large number of repetitions per cluster. This would sometimes result in prohibitive computations.

In this thesis, we propose methodologies to deal with such problems using so-called data splitting. In a nutshell, data splitting refers to splitting the difficult (sometimes infeasible) job of modelling a big dataset by splitting it into smaller chunks of manageable sub-data, analyzing each of them separately, and then combining the results of these analyses using appropriate combination rules. This would break a difficult task into several, often so-called embarrassingly parallel, simpler tasks. The data splitting approach consists of 3 steps:

1. Splitting the data;
2. Performing the analysis on each sub-dataset;
3. Efficiently combine the results from each sub-dataset to form an overall estimate with its precision.

We could summarize various splitting strategies into four main approaches:

- **Random horizontal data splitting.** This approach is useful when the number of clusters is large, and preferably the clusters are roughly of equal size, i.e., an (almost) balanced design. This will produce several sub-datasets with smaller sample sizes which are easier to handle.
- **Structured horizontal data splitting.** This approach is useful when some specific clusters are more convenient to deal with when they are together. Therefore, instead of taking random sub-samples, the sub-sampling can be done based on this pre-specified structure. An important example of this approach which is considered in this thesis is splitting based on the cluster sizes, i.e., forming sub-samples consisting of clusters of equal size. This would lead to balanced sub-samples. We have established the existence of closed-form solutions, leading to faster convergence of model fitting procedures.
- **Random vertical data splitting.** This approach is useful when we are dealing with data with large numbers of measurements for each cluster per outcome. In this situation one can take sub-samples of each cluster of manageable size.
- **Structured vertical data splitting.** This approach is useful when the number of outcomes of interest is large. While fitting a model to several outcomes could become heavy or infeasible, fitting models to all possible pairs (triples, etc.) of these outcomes is feasible. That means each sub-sample should consist of all of

the measurements for each subject regarding the pair of interest. Therefore, the sub-samples are taken using a pre-specified structure.

For each of these splitting strategies appropriate and efficient combination rules are developed. We also have considered exceptional cases where the general methodologies would fail. Our findings are motivated and supported by various datasets. Furthermore, the methodologies we have developed are implemented in statistical computing language R.

SAMENVATTING

Steekproefgrootte is altijd een belangrijk thema geweest in de statistiek. Terwijl de problemen zich lange tijd situeerden ter hoogte van kleine steekproeven, is het nu zo dat ook (zeer) grote steekproeven voor problemen zorgen bij statistische analyse. Wanneer zeer grote steekproeven gebruikt worden samen met heel complexe modellen, dan kunnen er zich een reeks problemen voordoen, zoals bijvoorbeeld onrealistisch lange berekeningstijden, convergentieproblemen, tot en met de onmogelijkheid om de voorkeurstchniek (bijv. meest aannemelijke schatters) te gebruiken.

Verder, terwijl in de eenvoudigste studies alle metingen onafhankelijk zijn, zien we vandaag heel veel zogenaamd hiërarchische gegevens (ook gekend onder de termen: clusters, gecorreleerde gegevens, afhankelijke

gegevens). Met de term ‘cluster’ verwijzen we naar metingen herhaald genomen aan eenzelfde eenheid (bijv. proefpersoon, huishouden, studie, enz.). Tegen die achtergrond verwijzen we met het aantal herhalingen naar het aantal metingen per cluster. Enkele voorbeelden: patiënten die herhaald doorheen de tijd worden gemeten; verscheidene patiënten van dezelfde huisarts of dezelfde kliniek, verscheidene web-links aangeklikt door dezelfde gebruiker, allerlei genetische informatie beschikbaar voor dezelfde persoon, enz. Belangrijke deelgebieden van cluster gegevens zijn herhaalde metingen, longitudinale gegevens, multi-centrische studies en meta-analyse. Ook vandaag is het in rekening brengen van correlatie binnen clusters een uitdagend probleem, vooral wanneer het totaal aantal clusters zeer groot is en/of wanneer een groot aantal metingen per cluster beschikbaar is. We worden dan veelal geconfronteerd met zo goed als onoverkomelijke problemen van berekenbaarheid.

In deze thesis stellen we methodologie voor om de bovenstaande problemen aan te pakken op basis van zogenaamde data-splitsing. In een notendop verwijst data-splitsing naar het opdelen van een moeilijke (soms zelfs onmogelijke) taak zoals het modelleren van een zeer grote dataset, in kleinere deeltaken die elk wel overzichtelijk zijn. Een voorbeeld is het analyseren van delen van de dataset, één voor één, waarna de resultaten worden gecombineerd tot één enkel resultaat. Als het aantal deeltaken zeer groot wordt spreken we in het Engels van *embarrassingly parallel tasks*. Data-splitsing bestaat uit drie deeltaken:

1. Splitsen van de data;

2. Elk van de delen analyseren;
3. Het efficiënt combineren van de resultaten tot één enkel eindresultaat.

Er zijn verscheidene splitsings-strategieën. We kunnen ze in vier grote klassen opdelen:

- **Random horizontale splitsing.** Deze methode is nuttig wanneer het aantal clusters groot is; idealiter zijn de clusters van ongeveer gelijke grootte, d.w.z. een (bijna) gebalanceerd steekproefopzet. Deze methode leidt tot een aantal sub-datasets van kleinere omvang, die elk makkelijker te manipuleren zijn.
- **Gestructureerde horizontale data splitsing.** Deze methode is nuttig wanneer sommige clusters makkelijker individueel te hanteren zijn dan in samenhang. Daarom, eerder dan willekeurige deel-steekproeven te nemen, maakt men hier gebruik van de vooraf aanwezige structuur. Een belangrijk voorbeeld, beschouwd in dit werk, is splitsing op basis van cluster-grootte. We vormen dus deel-datasets waarbinnen alle clusters dezelfde grootte hebben. Elk van deze deelsteekproeven is dan gebalanceerd. Voor dergelijke gebalanceerde deelsteekproeven hebben we het bestaan van gesloten schattingsvormen aangetoond. Dit leidt daarom tot bijzonder efficiënte procedures.
- **Random verticale data splitsing.** Deze methode is nuttig wanneer we een zeer groot aantal herhalingen hebben binnen een

cluster. We splitsen clusters dus in deelclusters van een hanteerbare grootte.

- **Gestructureerde verticale data splitsing.** Deze aanpak is nuttig wanneer het aantal te bestuderen responsveranderlijken groot is. Het gemeenschappelijk analyseren van alle responsveranderlijken samen is vaak ondoenbaar, maar dat geldt niet voor alle mogelijke paren die we vormen uit de responsveranderlijken (of tripels, quadrupels, enz.). De deelsteekproeven bestaan dan uit alle gegevens beschikbaar voor het paar van veranderlijken dat wordt beschouwd. Deelsteekproeven respecteren dus deze specifieke structuur.

Voor elk van de splitsings-strategieën werden gepaste en efficiënte combinatieregels opgesteld. Daarbij werden ook uitzonderlijke gevallen waar de algemene methodologie niet werkt in ogenschouw genomen. Onze resultaten werden gemotiveerd en geïllustreerd aan de hand van een reeks datasets. Tenslotte hebben we de voorgesloten methodologie geïmplementeerd in de statistische softwaretaal R.



LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

AR1	First-order autoregressive
ARMD	Age-related macular degeneration
BFI	Big five inventory
CS	Compound-symmetry
DiF	Divorce in Flanders
EFA	Exploratory factor analysis
FIL	Finite information limit
IMI	Iterative multiple imputation
IMO	Iterative multiple outputation
LES	Leuven eye study
MAR	Missing at random
MCAR	Missing completely at random
MI	Multiple imputation
MNAR	Missing not at random
MO	Multiple Outputation
PC	Principal component
PCA	Principal component analysis



CONTENTS

Preface	iii
Summary	vii
Samenvatting	xi
List of abbreviations	xvi
Contents	xvii
List of Figures	xxv
List of Tables	xxxiii
1 Introduction and general overview	1

1.1	Large clustered data	5
1.2	Evolution of a statistical model	8
1.3	Data splitting: a unified approach	12
1.4	Different types of splitting	14
1.4.1	Random horizontal splitting	14
1.4.2	Structured horizontal splitting	18
1.4.3	Random vertical splitting	21
1.4.4	Structured vertical splitting	29
1.5	Supplementary topics	34
1.5.1	How many sub-samples?	34
1.5.2	Special case: where combination rules fail	36
1.6	Software implementation	38
1.7	Publications	39
1.7.1	Publications covered in this thesis	39
1.7.2	Publications not covered in this thesis	40
2	Motivating datasets	43
2.1	A developmental toxicity study	44
2.2	Divorce in Flanders	45
2.3	Hearing data	47
2.4	Leuven diabetes project	48
2.5	Amazon book ratings	48
2.6	Clinical trials in schizophrenia	49
2.7	Cholesterol data	50
2.8	Age-related macular degeneration (ARMD)	50

2.9 Leuven eye study	51
3 Random horizontal splitting	53
3.1 The research question	54
3.2 A mixed model solution	56
3.3 A data-splitting based remedy	58
3.4 How precise are we?	63
3.5 Conclusions	65
4 Structured horizontal splitting	67
4.1 Compound-symmetry structure	68
4.1.1 Introduction	68
4.1.2 Developmental toxicity study sets	72
4.1.3 Incomplete sufficient statistics	73
4.1.4 The compound-symmetry model	74
4.1.5 Split-sample methods for clusters of variable size	79
4.1.6 Partitioned-sample analysis for the compound-symmetry model	84
4.1.7 Simulation study	92
4.1.8 Analysis of case study	94
4.1.9 Ramifications and concluding remarks	100
4.2 AR1 structure	103
4.2.1 Introduction	103
4.2.2 Model formulation	106
4.2.3 Estimators	107
4.2.4 Complete and incomplete sufficient statistics . . .	112

4.2.5	Clusters of variable size	117
4.2.6	Computational considerations and simulation study	122
4.2.7	Application: clinical trials in schizophrenia . . .	124
4.2.8	Concluding remarks	126
5	Random vertical splitting	133
5.1	Iterative multiple outputation	134
5.1.1	Efficient sub-sampling	136
5.2	Finite information limit estimators	139
5.2.1	Introduction	139
5.2.2	A compound-symmetry model	143
5.2.3	Finite information limit (FIL) estimators . . .	147
5.2.4	Extensions	154
5.2.5	Case study: amazon.com book ratings	162
5.2.6	Conclusion	166
6	Structured vertical splitting	169
6.1	Fast precision estimation	169
6.1.1	Introduction	169
6.1.2	A fast variance estimator based on multiple out- putation	173
6.1.3	Simulations	177
6.1.4	Application	181
6.1.5	Conclusions	185
7	Supplementary topics	191

7.1	Iterative multiple imputation	192
7.1.1	Introduction	192
7.1.2	Number of imputed datasets: a review	193
7.1.3	Number of imputed datasets: an alternative proposal	197
7.1.4	Simulation study	204
7.1.5	Applications	211
7.1.6	Discussion and concluding remarks	216
7.2	Multiple imputation for EFA	219
7.2.1	Introduction	219
7.2.2	Using multiple imputation with factor analysis: a review	221
7.2.3	Using multiple imputation with factor analysis: a proposal	223
7.2.4	Simulations	227
7.2.5	Divorce in Flanders	229
7.2.6	Conclusions	230
8	Software packages	235
8.1	R package fastCS	238
8.2	R package fastAR1	238
8.3	R package miscVSS	239
8.4	R package imi	239
8.5	R package mifa	240
9	Conclusions and future plan	241
9.1	Conclusions	241

9.2 Future research plan	246
Bibliography	253
Professional Background	273
Appendices	275
A.1 Incompleteness in the CS model	276
A.2 Likelihood-based estimation of the CS model	278
A.2.1 Score functions	278
A.2.2 Lack of closed-form solution when $K \geq 2$	278
A.3 Full likelihood	280
A.4 Pseudo-likelihood for split samples	284
A.4.1 General considerations	284
A.4.2 Pseudo-likelihood for split sample	287
A.5 Optimal scalar weights for CS	289
A.5.1 Cluster-by-cluster analysis	291
A.6 Details about the first simulation study	297
A.6.1 Simulation method	297
A.6.2 Setting 1	298
A.6.3 Setting 2	299
A.6.4 Setting 3	300
A.6.5 Optimal, approximate optimal, and iterated optimal weights	301
A.7 Details about the second simulation study	303
A.7.1 Simulation plan	305

A.7.2	Simulation results	312
A.8	The balanced conditionally independent model	317
A.9	Algebraic derivations in the AR(1) case	322
A.9.1	Some useful expressions	322
A.9.2	The likelihood estimators in a given cluster	324
A.9.3	Hessians, covariance matrices, and optimal weights	330
A.9.4	Proof of Proposition 4.1	334
A.9.5	Optimal weights in case of a general mean structure $X_i^{(k)}\beta$	336
A.9.6	Delta method for the mean estimator	339
A.9.7	Calculating $\hat{\rho}$ and $\hat{\sigma}^2$ in R	340
A.10	Details on additional simulations	341
A.10.1	Simulations with proportional and size-proportional weights	341
A.10.2	Simulations with proportional and size-proportional weights: ρ near 0/1	342
A.10.3	Simulations with optimal weights	343
A.10.4	Simulations on computation time	344
A.11	Details on PANSS data analysis	346
A.12	Fieller's method and delta method	349
A.13	Random vertical data splitting for CS	352
A.14	Combination rule for p -values for MI	354
A.15	The surrogate model	355

LIST OF FIGURES

4.1	NTP Data. Scalar weights: proportional and optimal scalar versions for EG and TGDM datasets. The optimal scalar weights are computed for $\rho = d/(\sigma^2 + d) = 0.5$	128
5.1	The effective sample sizes for different cluster sizes for CS and AR(1) covariance structures for different correlation values ρ	144
5.2	Comparing the ARE of full data with sub-samples of sizes $n_f = \{5, 10, 50\}$ for $\rho = \{0.2, 0.5, 0.8\}$. The dashed horizontal line shows ARE= 1.	153
5.3	Comparing the ARE of full data and sub-sampling of size $n_f = 50$, $M = 5$ times with different combinations of n_f and M for $\rho = 0.2$	159
5.4	Comparing the ARE of full data and sub-sampling of size $n_f = 50$, $M = 5$ times with different combinations of n_f and M for $\rho = 0.5$	160
5.5	Comparing the ARE of full data and sub-sampling of size $n_f = 50$, $M = 5$ times with different combinations of n_f and M for $\rho = 0.8$	161
5.6	Comparing the ARE of full data with sub-samples of sizes $n_f = 5, 10, 50$ when the results from $M = 1, 3, 5$ are combined using the weights $w_i = (5/65, 10/65, 50/65)$. 163	
5.7	Histogram of number of all and unique cluster sizes in Amazon books ratings data.	164

5.8	Amazon books ratings data. Fieller's upper-bound of n_f (log-scale) for different values of ε using $\alpha = 0.05$. The parameters are estimated using a sub-sample of size $n_1 = 5$	165
6.1	Simulations (Gaussian outcomes) comparing sandwich and MO corrections separately	187
6.2	Simulations (Gaussian outcomes): comparing sandwich and MO corrections	188
6.3	Application (hearing data)	190
7.1	Convergence plots for multivariate normal random vectors parameter estimates with CS and AR(1) covariance matrix structures	208
7.2	Convergence plots for the p -values of one sample and paired t -tests for different values of test statistics . . .	210
7.3	Averaged selected M with $k_0 = 3$ for data generated from a multivariate normal with mean 0 and covariance matrix with CS and AR(1) structures with $\sigma^2 = 16$ and $\rho = 0.5, 0.8$, as well as a logistic regression model . . .	212
7.4	Convergence plots for p -values of t -test on cholesterol data with $\mu_0 = 200$ and $\mu_0 = 220$ test values, and LES logistic regression, with $\epsilon = 0.05, 0.01$, $M_0 = 2$, and $k_0 = 3$	215
8.1	Top analytical tools for data science	236
A.6.1	First simulation study. Setting 1. Split-specific results. . .	300

A.6.2	First simulation study. Setting 1. Combining the results from the four splits, using equal, proportional, and size proportional weights. This is compared with full maximum likelihood.	301
A.6.3	First simulation study. Setting 2. Split-specific results. . .	303
A.6.4	First simulation study. Setting 2. Combining the results from the four splits, using equal, proportional, and size proportional weights. This is compared with full maximum likelihood.	304
A.6.5	First simulation study. Setting 3. Split-specific results. . .	306
A.6.6	First simulation study. Setting 3. Combining the results from the four splits, using equal, proportional, and size proportional weights. This is compared with full maximum likelihood.	307
A.6.7	First simulation study. Setting 1. (Size) proportional, approximate, and iterated optimal weights, as well as full maximum likelihood.	308
A.6.8	First simulation study. Setting 2. (Size) proportional, approximate, and iterated optimal weights, as well as full maximum likelihood.	309
A.6.9	First simulation study. Setting 3. (Size) proportional, approximate, and iterated optimal weights, as well as full maximum likelihood.	310
A.7.10	Second simulation study. Estimates for μ (first row) and its standard error (second row).	313

A.7.11 Second simulation study. Estimates for d (first row) and standard errors (second row).	314
A.7.12 Second simulation study. Estimates for σ^2 (first row) and standard errors (second row).	315
A.7.13 Second simulation study. Estimated CS parameters (first row) and their standard error (second row) using sample splitting, MI-MLE, and MLE.	357
A.9.14 The third degree polynomial in (A.9.23) for 10 different generated data. The red vertical line shows $\hat{\rho}$	358
A.10.15 Comparing proportional and size-proportional weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.1$	359
A.10.16 Comparing proportional and size-proportional weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.5$	360
A.10.17 Comparing proportional and size-proportional weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.8$	361
A.10.18 Simulation study. Boxplots comparing proportional and size-proportional weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.99, 0.95, 0.9, 0.8, 0.5, 0.2, 0.01$	362
A.10.19 Simulation study. Comparing proportional, size-proportional and full likelihood results via their empirical density for the 100 replications	363

A.10.20 Comparing iterated optimal and size-proportioanl weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.1$	364
A.10.21 Comparing iterated optimal and size-proportioanl weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.5$	365
A.10.22 Comparing iterated optimal and size-proportioanl weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.8$	366
A.10.23 Simulation study. Comparing computation time using closed form and numerical solutions	367
A.11.24 PANSS data. Boxplots for the entire set of data, for the subject from the first pattern only, and for various split samples.	367
A.11.25 PANSS data. 95% confidence intervals for fixed effects and variance components estimates and the standard deviations of these estimates using sample splitting, combined with proportional and size-proportional weights, and full likelihood (without trial model)	368
A.11.26 PANSS data. 95% confidence intervals for fixed effects and variance components estimates and the standard deviations of these estimates within each split (without trial model)	369

A.11.27 PANSS data. 95% confidence intervals for fixed effects and variance components estimates and the standard deviations of these estimates using sample splitting, com- bined with proportional and size-proportional weights, and full likelihood (with trial model)	370
A.11.28 PANSS data. 95% confidence intervals for fixed effects and variance components estimates and the standard deviations of these estimates within each split (with trial model)	371

LIST OF TABLES

1.1	Computation time (in microseconds) of different methods for different sample sizes (N)	3
1.2	Unique cluster sizes and their frequency in a developmental toxicity case study for the response DEHP.	19
3.1	D -matrix parameter estimation summary (120 component \tilde{D})	59
3.2	Comparing full sample and sample random horizontal splitting results for each factor separately.	66
4.1	Developmental Toxicity Study (DEHP). Summary data by dose group.	73
4.2	Cluster-by-cluster analysis- DEHP	95

4.3	Cluster-by-cluster analysis, EG	96
4.4	Cluster-by-cluster analysis, DYME	97
4.5	NTP Data (with dose effect)	129
4.6	PANSS data. Number of clusters in each trial for each cluster pattern. The pattern consists of the numbers representing the months after starting point for which a PANSS score is available.	130
4.7	PANSS data. Contributing splits in estimating each parameter	131
4.8	PANSS data. Estimating fixed effects and variance components and the standard deviations of these estimates using sample splitting without trials	131
4.9	PANSS data. Estimating fixed effects and variance components and the standard deviations of these estimates using sample splitting with trials	132
5.1	Computation time t (in seconds) for clustered data with unique cluster sizes $n_k \cdot 10^i$, with $n_k = 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10$ and $i = 0, 1, 2, 3, 4$, and with 100 clusters from each n_k (600 clusters in total).	140
5.2	Computation time (in seconds) for different combinations of n_f and M and the full data.	162
5.3	Estimating parameter vector (μ, τ, σ^2) and its standard error using $n_f = 5, 50, 100$	166
6.1	Simulations (non-Gaussian outcomes)	189

7.1	Mean, standard deviation (STD) for selected M given different ϵ and k_0 values, and number of times $M > 500$ for different models and different ϵ 's using the Mahalanobis-type distance with $S = \hat{V}$	232
7.2	Mean, standard deviation (STD) for selected M given different ϵ and k_0 values, and number of times $M > 500$ for different models and different ϵ 's for t -test and paired t -test with test value $\mu = 0$	233
7.3	Comparing different methods of doing factor analysis with missing data	233
7.4	Factor loadings using oblimin rotation of DiF data using the estimated covariance matrix from multiply imputed data using $M = 25$ imputations.	234
9.1	Data structure of high content screening study of DILI responses.	250
9.2	ARMD data. Frequency of centres based on the number of patients.	251
9.3	Analyzing ARMD data with random vertical splitting	251
A.6.4	First simulation study. Setting 1. Average of split-specific and combined (weighted) parameters and their precision estimates.	299
A.6.5	First simulation study. Setting 2. Average of split-specific and combined (weighted) parameters and their precision estimates.	302

A.6.6	First simulation study. Setting 3. Average of split-specific and combined (weighted) parameters and their precision estimates.	305
A.7.7	Second simulation study. Mean, standard deviation (S.D.) and MSE for μ among 100 replications for each configuration using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE.	312
A.7.8	Second simulation study. Mean and standard deviation (S.D.) for standard errors of μ estimates in 100 replications for each configuration using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE.	312
A.7.9	Second simulation study. Mean, standard deviation (S.D.) and MSE for d estimates in 100 replications for each configuration using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE.	316
A.7.10	Second simulation study. Mean and standard deviation (S.D.) for standard errors of d estimates in 100 replications for each configuration using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE.	317
A.7.11	Second simulation study. Mean, standard deviation (S.D.) and MSE for σ^2 estimates in 100 replications for each configuration using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE.	318

A.7.12 Second simulation study. Mean and standard deviation (S.D.) for standard errors of σ^2 estimates in 100 replications for each configuration using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE.	319
A.7.13 Second simulation study. Computation time (in seconds) using closed-form solutions with different implementation forms, compared to PROC MIXED.	320
A.7.14 Second simulation study. Mean, standard deviation (S.D.) and MSE for CS parameter estimates in 100 replications for configuration 2 using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE and MI-MLE.	321
A.7.15 Second simulation study. Mean and standard deviation (S.D.) for the standard error of CS parameter estimates in 100 replications for configuration 2 using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE and MI-MLE.	321
A.10.16 Comparing proportional, size-proportional and iterated optimal weights with full likelihood for AR(1) covariance structure.	342
A.10.17 Simulation study. Estimating μ and its standard deviation	346
A.10.18 Simulation study. Estimating ρ and its standard deviation	347
A.10.19 Simulation study. Estimating σ^2 and its standard deviation	348
A.10.20 Simulation study. The computation time	349
A.11.21 PANSS data. Number of clusters in each trial for each cluster pattern.	350

A.11.22 PANSS data. Comparing different error covariance structures using three model comparison criteria for without trial model	351
---	-----

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION AND GENERAL OVERVIEW

Small sample sizes would lead to wrong or statistically inaccurate conclusions. Therefore, in designing any statistical study, an important step is to estimate the sample size that would enable the researcher to draw valid conclusions. While a small sample size prevents reliable or meaningful statistical conclusions, large sample sizes have rarely been an issue, in fact a large sample size could be a desirable aspect of a study. However, in 21st century, having large sample sizes also, becomes a trouble-maker. By emerging technologies that make the task of data collection easy and fast, the size of samples in many studies becomes larger and larger, and this came to the point that, the power of a typical computer would fail to analyze such huge datasets. Figure 1.1 shows a

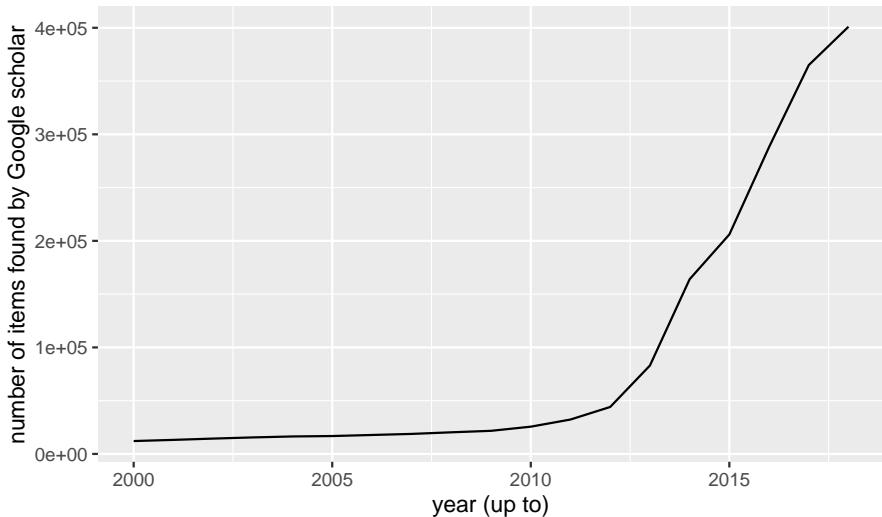


Figure 1.1: Number of items found by Google scholar when searching the exact phrase *big data* up to different years.

plot of number of results found using Google Scholar for searching the exact phrase "big data" upto different years. We obviously can see the increasing interest in this topic in the recent years.

There are several issues related to large datasets, including: how to store them, how to load them, and how to analyze them. Our interest in this thesis is in the last one. Although the last issue, the same as the two others, could be solved to some extent by increasing the computation power of the hardware we use, we believe statistical methods and ideas can provide solutions that are easy to understand, capable of being implemented in different situations and platforms, accurate, and also mathematically sound. This becomes more important when we realize

that increasing the computation power and size of available datasets are highly and positively correlated.

In Table 1.1 we compare the computation time for the sample sizes $n = 10, 10^2, 10^3, 10^4, 10^5, 10^6, 10^7$, for some simple computational tasks including:

- Generating a random sample from standard normal of size n .
- Finding the mean of the generated sample.
- Finding the variance of the generated sample.
- Fitting a linear model to a random sample from standard normal as the predictor x , and $y = 1 + 3x + \epsilon$, where $\epsilon \sim N(0, 0.01)$.
- Fitting a MAD (mean absolute deviation) regression to the same data.

N	Generation	Mean	Variance	LS	MAD
10	3.37	3.76	13.34	606.44	843.64
10^2	8.59	4.01	13.31	653.93	941.52
10^3	55.59	5.13	16.58	6556.18	1884.17
10^4	514.65	19.62	45.80	5277.53	45303.50
10^5	5548.44	165.05	338.17	63648.81	3785028.20
10^6	52107.15	1661.63	3364.90	677835.45	746370000.00
10^7	543018.13	16604.44	33645.15	8347072.97	60558830000.00

Table 1.1: Computation time (in microseconds) of different methods for different sample sizes (N).

As we may see, for some analyses, the computation time increases linearly

as the sample size increases, but for others, it would even slow down with a sub-linear rate. Once the cause of expensive computation time is the sample size, an effective solution could be to split the very large sample into smaller sub-samples and then analyze them separately. As each sub-sample has a smaller size, and analyzing these different sub-samples can be done independent of each other (can be run in parallel), the overall computation time can be decreased.

Splitting a sample into smaller chunks, then analyzing each part separately, and finally combining the results of these analyses is a known methodology to deal with large samples. Some authors have called this *Software Alchemy*, Matloff (2014). This idea is also at the heart of the MapReduce methodology (Dean and Ghemawat, 2008). The split-apply-combine strategy in the R packages `plyr` and `dplyr` also uses this idea (Wickham et al., 2011). All these would show the importance and effectiveness of this approach in practice.

However, most of these implementations would consider independent observations, or non-clustered data. Our goal in this thesis is to extend the existing methodology to the cases where the subjects would form clusters of correlated data. This type of data is very common in medical studies in particular, but they also can be observed in any longitudinal or multilevel studies. Some examples of such data are measurements on offsprings of the same animal, data collected from family members, data collected from different countries in a meta-analytic setting, measuring body temperature of the same person several times, ratings of the same

book by different people, measuring hearing ability of elderly people for several frequencies, measuring primary vital signs (body temperature, heart rate, respiratory rate, and blood pressure) for each person, etc.

As we have seen in Table 1.1, even for non-clustered data and simple models, increasing the sample size could cause very expensive computation times. The time needed to fit a MAD regression with one predictor to a sample of size 10 million is around 18 hours. Now, if we have clustered data that demands more complicated models to account for correlations, things would get even more difficult. In case of clustered data, the sample size can be seen from different points of view.

1.1 Large clustered data

Consider a study which measures m outcomes for N clusters, each n_i times. Let y_{rij} be the j th measurement taken on the i th cluster for the r th outcome, $i = 1, \dots, N$, $r = 1, \dots, m$ and $j = 1, \dots, n_{ri}$. As a simple example, take $m = 4$ responses as the vital signs: body temperature, heart rate, respiratory rate, and blood pressure, measured for $n_1 = n_2 = n_3 = n_4 = 100$ hospitalized patients. And, assume these outcomes are measured every 4 hours. For example, y_{111} is the body temperature of the first patient measured for the first time.

A general scheme of such clustered data is presented in Figure 1.2. A suitable model for such data should appropriately respect the correlation structures imposed by the fact that several measurements are done

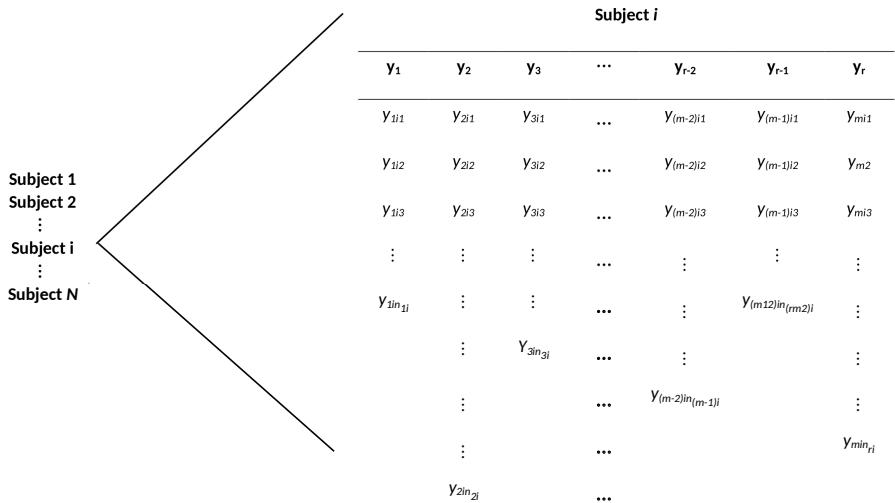


Figure 1.2: General scheme of the clustered data we consider through this thesis.

on the same subject. While even for moderate sample sizes, fitting such models could already become challenging, we may face a greater challenge when the size of the dataset makes it eligible for the title *big data*.

As it was mentioned, for non-clustered data big would mean a large number of subjects. However, in our case, a dataset could be entitled as *big data* in different situations. In case of the clustered data of interest in this thesis, data are considered to be big if at least one of the following applies:

- When the sample size, N , becomes very large,
- When the cluster sizes become very large:

- ▷ When the number of measurements per outcome for some clusters, n_{ri} 's, becomes very large,
- ▷ When the number of outcomes, m , becomes very large.

Note that, *big* would be different for N , n_{ri} , and m . For example, in case of a MAD regression, we have seen a dataset of size $N = 100,000$ could be analyzed in 0.001h, increasing the sample size to $N = 1000,000$ would increase the computation time to 0.2h, which is not fast, but still feasible, but $N = 10,000,000$ would take around 17 hours which could be too much. Therefore, in the case of a simple MAD regression, we may consider $N > 10,000,000$ as *big*.

When it comes to clustered data, however, a different story is going on. Some 100's could already be big in case of cluster size, n_{ri} (see Amazon book ratings data in Section 2.5), and even some 10's is *big* when we consider the number of outcomes m (see Hearing data in Section 2.3).

It goes without saying that, in reality, any combination of the above situations could happen. Our aim in this thesis is to provide appropriate methodologies to: 1- split the data into smaller chunks, 2- analyze each split, 3- combine these analyses in an efficient way. Our methodology should respect the nature of the data. While the mere task of splitting at random would already break down the difficult (sometimes infeasible) problems into smaller easier and feasible to analyze pieces, sometimes the structure of the data would allow for some *smart* non-random splitting which would then provide more gain. Our aim in this thesis is to cover

all of the situations which a dataset of clustered subjects could be called *big*.

In developing these methodologies we will make sure to keep two promises:

- While each methodology can deal with one situation, it should be possible to combine methodologies to deal with a combined situation.
- The splitting and combining steps of our methodology should be as independent as possible from the analyses step, so one can easily (or with a minor modification) use it for its desired analysis.

1.2 Evolution of a statistical model

Before proceeding to the main topic of this thesis which is *data splitting*, we may say a few words about *mixed models*. These models are a main tool to analyze clustered data, and will be visited several times throughout this thesis. More technical details about mixed models can be found in Verbeke and Molenberghs (2000) and Molenberghs and Verbeke (2005), in this section we try to explain how mixed models extend the usual linear models to be useful for analyzing clustered data.

In the expression *mixed model*, the model part is clear, so let us begin with the meaning of *mixed*. Mixed here refers to including both random and structured components in our model. Considering this, indeed, every

statistical model is a mixed model. As we have a structured part, and randomness of the error at the individual level. So while it is true that every statistical model is a mixture of structure and randomness, when we talk about a mixed model in particular, we mean other than the individual randomness (error of the model), we have some other random components in the model as well. Let us consider a usual linear model:

$$y_i = \mathbf{x}_i\beta + \epsilon_i, \quad (1.1)$$

where $E(y_i) = \mu_i = \mathbf{x}_i\beta$, and $\text{Var}(\epsilon_i) = \sigma^2$. This is a linear model with independent observations and homogeneous variance (i.e., the variance of ϵ_i is constant). One can extend this model to a model with heterogeneous variance by assuming $\text{Var}(\epsilon_i) = \sigma_i^2$. This means the ϵ_i 's have non-equal variances, but still they are uncorrelated. A step further would let them to be correlated: $\text{Var}(\epsilon_i) = R_i$, where R is a matrix with non-zero off-diagonal elements. In (1.2) one can see the evolution of the covariance matrix of the error from a model with independent observations and homogeneous variance to a model with heterogeneous variance and correlated errors.

$$\begin{aligned}
 & \left(\begin{array}{cccc} \sigma^2 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ 0 & \sigma^2 & \dots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ 0 & 0 & \dots & \sigma^2 \end{array} \right) \rightarrow \left(\begin{array}{cccc} \sigma_1^2 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ 0 & \sigma_2^2 & \dots & 0 \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ 0 & 0 & \dots & \sigma_p^2 \end{array} \right) \\
 & \rightarrow \left(\begin{array}{cccc} \sigma_1^2 & \sigma_{12} & \dots & \sigma_{1p} \\ \sigma_{21} & \sigma_2^2 & \dots & \sigma_{2p} \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ \sigma_{p1} & \sigma_{p2} & \dots & \sigma_p^2 \end{array} \right) \quad (1.2)
 \end{aligned}$$

The covariance matrix on the right side of (1.2) is called unstructured. But depending on the problem, one can impose appropriate structures on this covariance matrix. The two famous structures that are used in different applications are compound-symmetry, and first order autoregressive (AR1) structures. A compound-symmetry structure is defined as follows:

$$\left(\begin{array}{cccc} \sigma^2 + d & d & \dots & d \\ d & \sigma^2 + d & \dots & d \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ d & d & \dots & \sigma^2 + d \end{array} \right). \quad (1.3)$$

As one may see in (1.3), a compound-symmetry structure (CS) considers a constant variance equal to $\sigma^2 + d$ as well as a constant covariance equal to d . An AR1 structure would consider a constant variance equal

to σ^2 , but the correlations (off-diagonal elements) would depend on the distance between two components:

$$\begin{pmatrix} \sigma^2 & \sigma^2\rho & \dots & \sigma^2\rho^{p-1} \\ \sigma^2\rho & \sigma^2 & \dots & \sigma^2\rho^{p-1} \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ \sigma^2\rho & \sigma^2\rho^2 & \dots & \sigma^2 \end{pmatrix}. \quad (1.4)$$

In other words, CS covariance structure considers constant variance and covariance among different components, while the covariance in AR1 case decays as the distance between two component becomes larger.

We already have a complicated model that allows modeling clustered data. However, the only source of randomness in this model is still the error (randomness due to variability at the individual level). In some situations, the cluster itself could be a source of variation.

Take probably the most famous example in this setting: classes in the schools, and students in the classes. Of course, a source of variability here is coming from the students themselves. But schools are playing a role also. In other words, part of the variability in the students could come from the fact that they are all in the same school. In order to include this randomness in the model, the random-effects are introduced. Roughly speaking, random effects are cluster-specific parameters. A model that includes such parameters together with fixed effects (the overall effects) is called a mixed effect model. Such a model will extend

the model in (1.1) as follows:

$$y_i = \mathbf{x}_i\beta + \mathbf{z}_i\mathbf{b}_i + \epsilon_i, \quad (1.5)$$

comparing (1.1) and (1.5), we may see the difference is $\mathbf{z}_i\mathbf{b}_i$. The \mathbf{b}_i 's are indeed the cluster-specific parameters or random effects. They are (usually) considered to follow a multivariate normal distribution with mean $\mathbf{0}$ and covariance matrix D . We may still assume $\epsilon_i \sim N(\mathbf{0}, R_i)$.

1.3 Data splitting: a unified approach

Data splitting is a general idea to deal with big, massive, and large data. Large here could be any of the cases we have mentioned above, or a combination of them. Our general approach to deal with this situation consists of three main steps as follows. We call these three steps *data splitting*.

1. **Splitting:** in this step, the data should be splitted into smaller chunks in a way that analyzing each of them becomes more convenient than the dataset as a whole. This convenience would at least come from having sub-samples of smaller sizes, but it could be possible to perform the splitting in a way that some other nice features (balancedness, for example) that the original data does not own, could be created in all or some of these sub-samples.
2. **Analyzing:** in this step, each split of data will be analyzed using the conventional methods. Therefore, using the *data splitting*

approach, one can use his/her own favorite methodologies which are only suitable for small to moderate sample sizes. Typically, with the *data splitting* approach that we propose here, the only information one needs to extract and keep from analyzing each split of data are: the estimated parameter vector, and their covariance matrix (if there is a need to provide standard errors of such estimates).

3. **Combining:** within this unified framework, each parameter in the model could be estimated several times. As our interest is to have one single set of parameter estimates, the last step in this paradigm is to combine all analysis results from the second step into one single set. This should be done via appropriate combination rules. The combination rule is simply a weighted average of the results from different splits. Therefore, there is the need for proposing appropriate weights. Also, when it comes to combining covariance matrices, the fact that these results are coming from different (possibly dependent) sub-samples should be well respected.

In the following sections we will review different splitting approaches, and also their appropriate combination rules. We will also give examples from our motivating datasets where each of these approaches could be beneficial.

1.4 Different types of splitting

We have already discussed the Software Alchemy, or split-apply-combine approaches. The main splitting technique that is implemented using such approaches is to split the data: 1- randomly, 2- at subject level. Throughout this thesis we would call the splitting at the subject level *horizontal splitting*. The reason for that can be seen in the Figure 1.2. If we illustrate the splits by separating lines, such lines will be horizontal. On the other hand, if the splitting is done for the data within a subject, then the lines should be drawn vertically. This case is specific to the clustered data where we have more than one observation for each subject.

While random splitting (assigning members of each split at random) is an effective way in many situations, there are cases where assigning members of each split based on a predefined structure has an added value. We call such splitting approach structured splitting as opposed to random splitting. In the following we will give an overview of the four types of splitting (combinations of random/structured and horizontal/vertical splitting), and present examples where each of them could be useful. We will also briefly go over analyzing and combining steps.

1.4.1 Random horizontal splitting

Random horizontal splitting, as its name suggests, tries to assign different subjects to different splits at random. There are several ways to do this task, the way we have used in our implementations is as follows.

To split the dataset of size N into M sub-samples, take $m = \lfloor N/M \rfloor$ as the size of each split to make sub-samples of roughly the same sizes, then

1. generate a random sample of size N from standard normal.
2. Order the generated sample.
3. Divide the ordered indexes into $(M-1)$ parts of size m , and the m th chunk will include all the remaining indexes. These will be the indexes of subjects that should be assigned to each split.

Note that, M should be carefully selected. Two main points to consider when selecting M are first to make sure the resulting sub-samples are small enough to keep the computation time at an acceptable level. At the same time one needs to be careful that the sub-samples stay large enough, so the methodologies can still be applied on them in a valid way.

Assume $\hat{\theta}_1, \dots, \hat{\theta}_M$ are the estimated parameters from M sub-samples, the data splitting estimate of this parameter can be computed as follows:

$$\tilde{\theta} = \sum_{m=1}^M w_m \hat{\theta}_m, \quad (1.6)$$

where w_m 's are the combination weights, and $\sum_{m=1}^M w_m = 1$. An appropriate set of weights could be assigned proportional to the size of each split, i.e., a larger split contributes more to the final estimate. We

would call such weights proportional weights in this thesis:

$$w_{prop,i} = \frac{m_i}{N}. \quad (1.7)$$

Of course, in case of random splitting, as the split sizes are roughly the same, one can simply assign equal weights to different sub-samples. Such weights are called equal (or constant) weights in this thesis:

$$w_{equal,i} = \frac{1}{M}. \quad (1.8)$$

The combination rule in case of horizontal splitting is simpler than vertical splitting. This comes from the fact that the sub-samples are independent in this case, therefore, one does not need to be concerned about the correlations between the estimates coming from different sub-samples. For a general weight w_i , consider $\text{Var}(\hat{\theta}_i) = \sigma_i^2$, then the variance of the data splitting estimator can be computed as follows:

$$\text{Var}_{horizontal}(\tilde{\theta}) = \sum_{m=1}^M w_m^2 \sigma_m^2. \quad (1.9)$$

As having a smaller variance is a desired property for an estimator, Equation (1.9) would give an idea about an alternative way of assigning weights to our estimates: the weights should be computed in a way that minimizes the variance in (1.9). In this thesis, such weights are called optimal weights. We define the optimal weights as the minimizer of the

following objective function:

$$Q = \sum_{m=1}^M w_m^2 \sigma_m^2 - \lambda \left(\sum_{m=1}^M w_m - 1 \right), \quad (1.10)$$

where λ is a Lagrange multiplier to make sure that the sum of estimated optimal weights is still 1. Solving the optimization problem in (1.10) would lead to the following optimal weights,

$$w_{opt,i} = \frac{1/\sigma_i^2}{\sum_{m=1}^M 1/\sigma_m^2}, \quad (1.11)$$

As one may see, a larger weight is given to a sub-sample with a smaller variance.

In using optimal weights, one needs to be concerned about the fact that optimal weights are including parameters from model, which then needs to be replaced by an estimate (we will discuss different ways of doing it in the coming chapters), and these estimates will come with their own variability. So, if the variability these estimates will bring becomes larger than the variability that the optimal weights could decrease, then it is better to use the simpler parameter-free weights.

An alternative way of using optimal weights is the so-called *iterated optimal weights*:

1. Combine parameters using a parameter-free set of weights (e.g., equal weights).

2. Use these combined parameters to compute the optimal weights.
3. Update the combined parameters using the weights in Step 2.
4. Repeat steps 2–3 until the procedure converges.

An example in our motivation datasets where random horizontal splitting can be beneficial is the Divorce in Flanders, where clusters are formed by family members. While each family is at most of size 7, the number of total available families is large enough to make conventional software to fail. By splitting this large sample randomly and at the family level (horizontally), we could be able to fit the models and answer the research questions.

1.4.2 Structured horizontal splitting

As we have discussed, random horizontal splitting has been used by many researchers in different contexts to deal with big data issue. However, a randomly horizontal split would only decrease the sample size. So all we gain is due to having smaller sample sizes. We have observed that there are cases where splitting using a pre-defined structure would provide some added benefits on top of just having smaller sub-samples.

It is a well-known fact that a balanced study design works better than an unbalanced one. By balanced we mean, the number of available data points for all clusters are the same. In fact, most of the studies are planned to be balanced, but in practice they would rarely end up like that. There are several reasons for this, among them: the required

materials are not enough, some patients die, some animals fail to follow the instructions, etc. Therefore, while having a balanced set of data is desired and even planned, we will usually have an unbalanced data to analyze.

Although most of the data in practice are unbalanced, one can usually find balanced sub-sets of such data. Take our example on a developmental toxicity study (Section 2.1). There, the clusters are made of fetuses within litters. As different mothers would have different number of babies, the final data is unbalanced. However, as one can see in Table 1.2, the unique number of fetuses within different litters are limited. Therefore, the complete unbalanced data is actually formed by balanced sub-sets. A structured horizontal splitting would assign all clusters of the same size to one sub-sample.

Table 1.2: Unique cluster sizes and their frequency in a developmental toxicity case study for the response DEHP.

Cluster size	9	10	15	8	12	13	14	6	7	3	11	16
Frequency	10	9	3	12	20	18	6	4	5	4	9	4

As it was mentioned, there are several benefits for a balanced dataset. For clustered data in particular, we have shown that for some models a closed-form solution exists when the cluster sizes are balanced, whereas for unbalanced data one needs to fit the models using iterative procedures. For very large datasets, the iterative procedures could be prohibitive and slow. While a closed-form solution can be computed much faster. We have observed tens of thousands time faster computation using

structured horizontal splitting based on the cluster sizes.

In this thesis, we will study two models in details: clustered data with a compound-symmetry (CS) covariance structure, and clustered data with an autoregressive of order one (AR1) covariance structure. It is worth to note that, even if the closed-form does not exist, with a balanced dataset one would have a faster and more stable convergence compared to unbalanced data.

The two considered covariance structures would cover a wide range of applications: where the correlation between every two members of a cluster is always the same (compound-symmetry), and when it decreases when the distance between the two observations becomes larger (AR1). For these two cases, the existence of the closed-form solutions are shown using sufficient complete statistics. Then these closed-form solutions are obtained, also various kinds of weights, including optimal weights are computed for each case. On top of the weights we have already discussed, as we have clusters of all different sizes in different sub-samples here, we have proposed another type of weights, as follows,

$$w_{size-prop,i} = \frac{m_i n_i}{\sum_{k=1}^M m_k n_k}. \quad (1.12)$$

In some cases that the cluster size is also important (other than the number of clusters in each sub-sample), such weights would perform better. We have shown that AR(1) is one of these cases, while for the CS, proportional weights would work fine.

Note that, the structured horizontal splitting idea is very general and all the introduced methodologies regarding different weights, combination rules, etc., can be used for any suitable structure of splitting (as long as they are horizontal), but in this thesis we only consider the cases where the structure is defined based on size of the clusters.

1.4.3 Random vertical splitting

The horizontal splitting techniques would be beneficial when the number of clusters (N) is large, while the cluster size is still small or moderate. But there are examples where the size of some or all of the clusters is also very large. And as we have mentioned, large for a cluster size has a much smaller magnitude compared with large for the number of clusters. In such cases, horizontal splitting would not help much, because each cluster in our sub-samples is still large, so by horizontal splitting we just breakdown one problem into M problems.

As an example, consider the Amazon book ratings (Section 2.5). There, we have the ratings for many books given by different buyers. Therefore, each book could possibly be rated by thousands of people. This will create very large clusters for which even the simple models would fail to converge. In such a case, horizontal splitting cannot solve our problem. To solve the issue here, we have to perform the splitting within the subject. For example, if there are 5000 people rating a book, in order to make smaller clusters in our sub-samples, we have to split these 5000 people into, e.g., 100 sub-samples, each of size 50.

As long as the interest is in the parameter estimate, the combination rule in (1.6) is still valid. But the difficulty will appear in deriving the combination rule for the variances. As the data from different clusters are shared among different sub-samples, or in other words, one cluster is present in more than one sub-sample, the estimated parameters from different sub-samples are correlated. Obviously, when combining the variances, these correlations should be taken into account.

One way to deal with the combination rule of variance in case of vertical splitting is to look at our sample splitting-based model fitting in the framework of pseudo-likelihood methodology, rather than the likelihood. In fact, once the dataset is analyzed in whole we use the conventional likelihood theory, i.e., the estimate of our parameters are found by maximizing the likelihood function. But when the data is splitted into some sub-samples, each of these sub-samples are analyzed using a likelihood approach, but their combination is not the original likelihood function anymore. It is called pseudo-likelihood.

Roughly speaking, pseudo-likelihood theory tries to replace the complex or difficult likelihood function with something simpler or easier. But maximizing both likelihood or pseudo-likelihood functions would follow the same goal: estimate the same set of parameters, but with different precision.

From Cramér-Rao's lower bound (Casella and Berger, 2002) we know that the lower bound for variance can be achieved by a maximum likelihood estimator. In other words, any other estimator (including

maximum pseudo-likelihood) would come with a variance larger than the one from the maximum likelihood. Therefore, having the easier problem to solve comes at the price of losing a bit of accuracy.

Let us define the pseudo-likelihood in plain English. Assume we have a sample \mathbf{y} and using that we want to estimate the parameters vector θ via the log-likelihood function $\ell(\theta; \mathbf{y})$. Using sample splitting, we split the sample \mathbf{y} into M sub-samples $\mathbf{y}_1, \dots, \mathbf{y}_M$, then feed them to the same likelihood function and estimate the parameter vector, θ , M times. Under the pseudo-likelihood paradigm, one can look at this as estimating a parameter vector $\Theta = (\theta_1, \theta_2, \dots, \theta_M)$ using the sample $\mathbf{Y} = (\mathbf{y}_1, \dots, \mathbf{y}_M)$ via maximizing the pseudo-likelihood function $p\ell(\Theta, \mathbf{Y})$. Note that, $\theta_1 = \theta_2 = \theta_3 = \dots = \theta_M$.

Now that the problem is defined under a pseudo-likelihood theory, all the results obtained there can be carried over to the data splitting as well. If we consider matrix A that combines the estimates, i.e., $\tilde{\theta} = A\hat{\Theta}$, then the most important result we can present is:

$$\sqrt{N}(\hat{\theta} - \theta) = \sqrt{N}(A\hat{\Theta} - A\Theta) \xrightarrow{d} N\left(\mathbf{0}, AI_0^{-1}I_1I_0^{-1}A^T\right), \quad (1.13)$$

where T means the transpose, and I_0 and I_1 are defined as follows,

$$I_0(\Theta) = E\left(\frac{\partial^2 p\ell(\Theta; \mathbf{Y})}{\partial \Theta^T \partial \Theta}\right), \quad I_1(\Theta) = \left[\left(\frac{\partial p\ell(\Theta)}{\partial \theta}\right)^T \frac{\partial p\ell(\Theta)}{\partial \theta}\right]. \quad (1.14)$$

More details on pseudo-likelihood interpretation of the data splitting can be found in Molenberghs et al. (2011).

However, a main difficulty to find the variance in (1.13) is the need for cluster-wise Hessian and gradient of the pseudo-likelihood function. This could easily become expensive. Also, depending on the gradient and Hessian means this variance estimator needs to be computed for each problem separately. For example, the results obtained for a logistic regression cannot be used for another model without the necessary modification. To overcome these difficulties, we have considered an alternative solution proposed by Hoffman et al. (2001) in a different context. Their approach is called within cluster re-sampling, which was later on extended and renamed to *multiple outputation* (MO) by Follmann et al. (2003).

In order to explain the motivation behind the multiple outputation technique, consider clustered data where each cluster consists of blood pressure of a patient visiting a hospital several times. The objective of the study is the severity of a disease which is highly correlated with blood pressure (more severe the disease, the larger the blood pressure). The blood pressure is measured every time the patient visits the hospital. Therefore, a larger cluster size means the patient has visited the hospital more often. Which indicates that the patient had more issues with the blood pressure, so a more severe state of the disease. In other words, the size of the cluster is also correlated with the response and objective of the study. Such situations are also called *informative cluster size* in the literature. The correlation of cluster size and the response should be respected in the model, otherwise it could cause issues. Multiple outputation has been proposed to deal with this problem.

Within cluster resampling was proposed by Hoffman et al. (2001) to deal with the so-called informative cluster size, when it is a nuisance parameter. Hoffman et al. (2001) proposed to take sub-samples of size 1 from each cluster repeatedly to form a sample on non-clustered data every time. Then the conventional methods can be used for each of these non-clustered data. The results then can be combined via combination rules which are similar to (1.6) for the estimates. For the variance Hoffman et al. (2001) proposed the following combination rule:

$$\text{Var}(\tilde{\theta}) = W - \left(1 + \frac{1}{M}\right) B, \quad (1.15)$$

where W and B are within and between sub-samples variances, respectively. These quantities are defined as follows,

$$W = \frac{1}{M} \sum_{i=1}^M \sigma_m^2, \quad B = \frac{1}{M-1} \sum_{i=1}^M (\hat{\theta}_i - \tilde{\theta})^2. \quad (1.16)$$

The combination rule for the variance in (1.15) is also intuitively interesting. It states, the variance of the vertical data splitting estimator is an average of the variances in different sub-samples, but when we subtract it from the sample variance of estimated parameter from different sub-samples. Looking at this combination rule, one might also understand the reason behind naming this method multiple outputation by Follmann et al. (2003). That is because of various similarities of this technique with multiple imputation. Although, these similarities are rather technical than literal.

First, let us say a word on multiple imputation itself. Multiple imputation (MI) is an effective way to deal with the missing data issue. The traditional missingness remedies would try to either ignore that missing part of the sample, or replace it with a single plausible value. This way, one would treat a before-missing and now-imputed value the same as a value which is originally observed. In order to respect the fact that imputed values are actually imputed and as well could be any other value, Rubin (1978) proposed to replace each missing value with several plausible values.

Now we may look at similarities of MI and MO. As it was mentioned, multiple imputation creates artificial data and augment them to the incomplete sample to make it complete. On the contrary but in a similar way, multiple outputation would every time put some part of the sample out of the analysis. Therefore, multiple **im**putation increases the sample size by including new artificial data, while multiple **out**putation decreases the sample size by selecting only a subset of them. But in both of the methods, we will have several datasets to analyze rather than the one single original dataset. So, in both methods we estimate each parameter several times. This is also reflected in the variance estimator. Let us remind the combination rule for variance from Rubin (1987),

$$\text{Var}(\widehat{\theta}_{MI}) = W + \left(1 + \frac{1}{M}\right)B. \quad (1.17)$$

As one may see, the only difference of (1.17) and (1.15) is in the fact that MI would add the between datasets variability of the estimated

parameters to the averaged variance, while MO would subtract this quantity. This would also make sense intuitively. In case of MI we artificially increase the sample size, so we would get a smaller variance which needs a correction (to become larger, as it should be), but in case of MO we decrease the sample size, so a larger variance would be obtained, which is then also corrected in the same way as MI just with a different sign. For this reason, MI and MO have several issues in common. Therefore, solutions found for one of them can be used for the other one as well. Considering the vast use of multiple imputation in practice, we have developed part of our contributions for MI.

We have extended the idea of within cluster re-sampling and multiple outputation to make them suitable for our purpose: analyzing clustered data with big clusters. The so-called iterative multiple outputation (IMO) procedure is proposed to fulfil this role. IMO is proposed as follows,

1. **Start.** Select an initial number of sub-samples, M_0 , and sub-sampling size m . Take M_0 sub-samples of size m , fit the model to each and obtain $\widehat{\theta}_i$ and its variance $\Sigma_{\widehat{\theta}_i}$ ($i = 1, \dots, M_0$). Then compute

$$\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{M_0} = \sum_{i=1}^{M_0} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_i, \quad \widetilde{\Sigma_{\boldsymbol{\theta}_{M_0}}} = \widehat{W}_{M_0} - \left(\frac{M_0 + 1}{M_0} \right) \widehat{B}_{M_0}. \quad (1.18)$$

2. **Update.** For sub-sampling size $m > M_0$, $m > M_0$,

$$\begin{aligned}\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} &= \frac{m\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m + \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}}{m+1}, \\ \Sigma_{\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}} &= \widehat{W}_{m+1} - \left(\frac{m+1}{m}\right) \hat{B}_{m+1}.\end{aligned}\tag{1.19}$$

3. **Distance.** Compute: $d_{m+1} = d(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}, \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m)$ using an appropriate distance.

4. **Stopping rule.** $d_j < \varepsilon$ for $j = m+1, \dots, m+k_0$.

Where for $m = r$ we have,

$$\widehat{W}_r = \frac{\sum_{i=1}^r \sigma_{\hat{\theta}_i}}{r}, \quad \hat{B}_r = \frac{\sum_{i=1}^r (\hat{\theta}_i - \tilde{\theta}_r)(\hat{\theta}_i - \tilde{\theta}_r)'}{r-1}.\tag{1.20}$$

We may remark, there are cases that only $M = 1$ sub-sample would be sufficient to obtain results almost as efficient as analyzing the full dataset. We have studied this matter in detail and called such estimators *finite information limit estimators* (see Section 5.2). We have also proposed procedures to detect this property.

A very useful dataset to illustrate the usefulness of random vertical splitting is the Amazon's book ratings dataset. This set of data consists of ratings of several books (from 1 to 5) on Amazon website. Each book is rated by different number of people, which could be as small as 1 and as large as 20,000. So we will deal with clustered data of very variable and large sizes.

1.4.4 Structured vertical splitting

So far we have discussed random horizontal and random vertical splitting, as well as structured horizontal splitting. In case of the vertical splitting also, pre-defining some sub-sampling structures (other than random) could be beneficial. We have already seen one application of structured splitting in case of horizontal splitting, which enabled us to form balanced sub-samples. In this section we will discuss an application of structured splitting in case of vertical sample splitting.

Jointly modeling several outcomes via random effects is a useful example for structured vertical splitting. Such a problem can easily become infeasible when the number of outcomes becomes large (even tens of them). Fieuws and Verbeke (2006) and Fieuws et al. (2007) proposed to analyze all possible pairs of all outcomes instead of analyzing them simultaneously. Then use appropriate combination rules to find the parameters of the model of interest. To illustrate the problem, also to show similarities and differences of structured vertical splitting and the approach of Fieuws and Verbeke (2006) and Fieuws et al. (2007), we present a simple example.

Imagine we have 3 outcomes to be jointly modeled. A random effects approach would fit a separate mixed model to each outcome, then let them to be correlated by defining a joint distribution for their random effects. This joint distribution is usually normal where its covariance matrix would capture the dependencies between different outcomes. Let us elaborate more here. If the three separate models (all linear) for the

three outcomes are defined using the following general form:

$$\begin{cases} y_{1ij} = \beta_1 + b_{1i} + \epsilon_{1ij} \\ y_{2ij} = \beta_2 + b_{2i} + \epsilon_{2ij} \\ y_{3ij} = \beta_3 + b_{3i} + \epsilon_{3ij}, \end{cases} \quad (1.21)$$

we let the three random intercepts to be normally distributed as follows,

$$\begin{bmatrix} b_{1i} \\ b_{2i} \\ b_{3i} \end{bmatrix} \sim N \left(\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, D = \begin{bmatrix} D_{11} & D_{12} & D_{13} \\ & D_{22} & D_{23} \\ & & D_{33} \end{bmatrix} \right). \quad (1.22)$$

Therefore, the parameter of interest, $\boldsymbol{\theta}$, is:

$$\boldsymbol{\theta} = (\beta_1, \beta_2, \beta_3, D_{11}, D_{22}, D_{33}, D_{12}, D_{13}, D_{23}). \quad (1.23)$$

As we have 3 outcomes, the number of pairs will be $M = 3 \times (3-1)/2 = 3$. However, unlike random vertical splitting where usually all parameters of interest are estimated in each sub-sample, here, because of the special structure we have imposed on the sub-samples, each of them would estimate part of the parameter vector. The parameters estimated in each pair ($\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(s)}$) are as follows:

$$\begin{cases} \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(1)} = \theta_{(y_{1ij}, y_{2ij})} = (\beta_{11}, \beta_{21}, D_{111},, D_{221}, D_{121}) \\ \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(2)} = \theta_{(y_{1ij}, y_{3ij})} = (\beta_{12}, \beta_{32}, D_{112},, D_{332}, D_{132}) \\ \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(3)} = \theta_{(y_{2ij}, y_{3ij})} = (\beta_{23}, \beta_{33}, D_{223},, D_{333}, D_{233}), \end{cases} \quad (1.24)$$

as one may see in (1.24), each $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(s)}$ ($s = 1, 2, 3$) is a subset of $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ in (1.23). Now, the stacked vector combining all parameters estimated in different sub-samples $\boldsymbol{\Theta}' = (\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(1)}, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(2)}, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(3)})$ can be constructed as follows:

$$\boldsymbol{\Theta}' = (\beta_{11}, \beta_{21}, D_{11_1}, D_{22_1}, D_{12_1}, \beta_{12}, \beta_{32}, D_{11_2}, D_{33_2}, D_{13_2}, \beta_{23}, \beta_{33}, \\ D_{22_3}, D_{33_3}, D_{23_3}). \quad (1.25)$$

As one may see, the covariance parameters (D_{12}, D_{13}, D_{23}) are only estimated once using their corresponding pair, but the rest of parameters are appearing in two out of three pairs. Therefore, to combine these estimates we cannot just average all estimates as we did in (1.6). The weight matrix to perform the appropriate combination can be defined as follows,

$$A = \begin{pmatrix} \beta_{11} & \beta_{21} & D_{11_1} & D_{22_1} & D_{12_1} & \beta_{12} & \beta_{32} & D_{11_2} & D_{33_2} & D_{13_2} & \beta_{23} & \beta_{33} & D_{22_3} & D_{33_3} & D_{23_3} \\ \beta_1 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \beta_2 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \beta_3 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ D_{11} & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ D_{22} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ D_{33} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ D_{12} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ D_{13} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ D_{23} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

Obviously, $\sum_i A_i$ (with A_i the i th row of A) shows the number of times each parameter is estimated. Therefore, defining W with each of its rows computed as $A_i / \sum_i A_i$, and pre-multiplying it by $\hat{\Theta}$ would provide

the appropriate averaging. The same goes for the variance combination rule. Fieuws and Verbeke (2006) and Fieuws et al. (2007) used a pseudo-likelihood approach to find the combined covariance matrix (the same as in 1.13), we could show using (1.15) with appropriate weights works the same, but much faster.

As one may see, only the covariance matrix of the random effects have 6 parameters to be estimated, if one decides to add random slopes also, then the number of parameters will increase to $(6 \times 7)/2 = 21$. Once the number of responses becomes slightly larger, the number of parameters will dramatically increase. This would face all conventional methods with serious problems. Figure 1.3 shows how the number of parameters in the covariance matrix of random effects alone would increase when the number of responses increases. As we may see in this figure, even for less than 100 responses, the number of parameters becomes extremely large.

Therefore, there is a main difference between the applications we have proposed for random vertical splitting, and structured vertical splitting. While both of them are proposed to deal with large clusters, the issue random vertical splitting deals with is a large unbalanced sample size, while structured vertical splitting deals with a high-dimensional parameter space. In other words, in case of structured vertical splitting we are dealing with the so-called curse of dimensionality (Donoho et al., 2000). In fact, particularly for this *big* parameter space, we have to impose a structure on it, so in every sub-sample a sub-set of this parameter vector

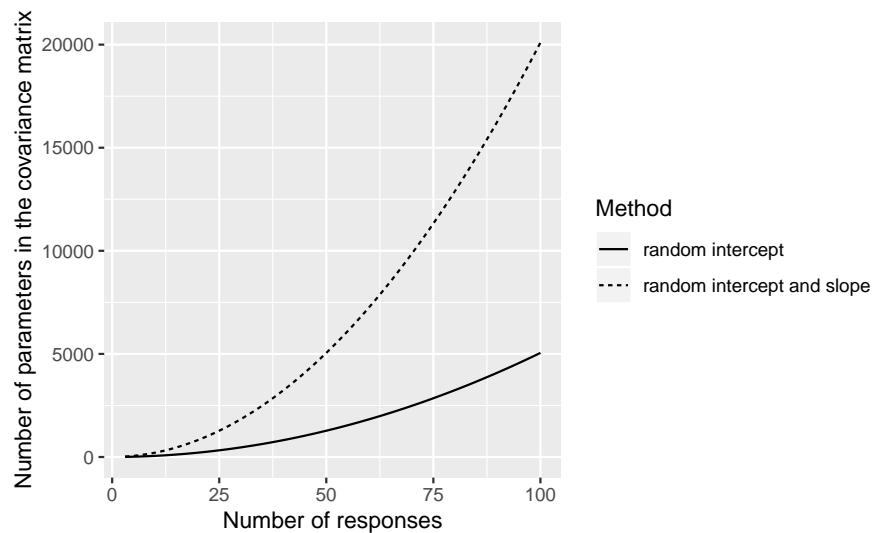


Figure 1.3: Number of parameters in the covariance matrix of jointly normally distributed random effects for different number of responses using only random intercept or random intercept and slope models.

could be estimated. The smart idea of modeling several outcomes by all their sub-sets of two would break down the parameter space by breaking down the sample itself. That is why, in case of random splitting, every sub-sample usually estimates all parameters, while this is not often the case for structured vertical splitting.

We have two examples in our motivational datasets which are used to illustrate the applications of structured vertical splitting. We have used *Leuven diabetes project* data as a basis to perform simulation studies to evaluate our proposed way of combining variances. Furthermore, the *Hearing data* is used as an example of high-dimensional parameter space where the conventional methods would fail.

1.5 Supplementary topics

As it was mentioned, due to several technical similarities between vertical data splitting (iterative multiple outputation) and multiple imputation, and due to wide acceptance of MI in different research fields, we have developed part of our required methodology in MI language rather than the language of IMO. However, the conclusions are valid in both cases. In this section we briefly go over these contributions which will be presented in Chapter 7.

1.5.1 How many sub-samples?

The iterative multiple outputation (IMO) procedure that we have proposed for random vertical splitting includes a stopping rule at step 4.

This is used to determine the number of sub-samples. Let us briefly explain the idea behind this stopping rule in this section. Obviously, having a larger number of sub-samples is better to obtain a more precise estimate. But on the other hand, as the sub-samples are with replacement, one can take an infinite number of sub-samples, so there is a need for a rule to stop the IMO procedure.

As we have seen in (1.6), the combination rule of data splitting for parameter estimates is averaging. From laws of large numbers we know that under general regularity conditions, as the sample size increases, the average converges to a finite quantity. We have seen that also via central limit theorem in (1.13). As we average over sub-samples, sample size here means the number of sub-samples. Therefore, we would expect, after some point, increasing the number of sub-samples would not impressively change the final results (convergence is achieved). But it is important to come up with appropriate criteria and stopping rules to stop the sub-sampling at the right moment. It is important for two main reasons: 1- if we stop early, we would fail to provide precise and correct estimates, 2- if we stop too late, our initial intention for saving computation time could be compromised.

We have already explained the connection of multiple imputation and IMO, also how they would suffer from the same issues. In multiple imputation also, a main issue is to determine the number of imputed datasets. Therefore, we have studied this question for MI in detail via simulation studies and theoretical discussion. Various distance functions

(Mahalanobis, Euclidean, etc.) were examined for different situations and as a result we proposed the iterative multiple imputation procedure. The obtained results are all valid in case of IMO, therefore, we have used the same stopping rule in IMO.

In order to illustrate iterative multiple imputation, we have used two datasets, the *Leuven Eye Study* (LES) and the *Cholesterol data*. LES is collected via one of the largest observational studies for glaucoma. However, the dataset includes a lot of missing data. Practically, no fully observed line exists in this dataset, so without MI the analysis was not possible. The second dataset is a famous dataset used many times to illustrate different aspects of multiple imputation.

1.5.2 Special case: where combination rules fail

A fundamental rule which should be followed when using the combination rule in (1.6) is to average parameters which are counterparts of the same parameter in the model for the full sample. In some applications, finding such counterparts is not a straightforward task. An example of such situations is principal component analysis (PCA). Methods like PCA work based on eigenvalue decomposition of the covariance (or correlation) matrix. Eigenvalues of a matrix Σ can be obtained by solving the following equation,

$$|\Sigma - \lambda I|,$$

where $|.|$ for a matrix denotes the determinant of it and I is the identity matrix of the same order as Σ . The roots of this equation are the eigenvalues. Obviously, there is no natural ordering among roots of a polynomial. But in case of PCA one can show that (Mardia et al., 1979) these eigenvalues are actually variances of their corresponding principal components, therefore, a principal component (PC) with a larger eigenvalue explains a larger proportion of the total variance.

The issue arises when we use data splitting or multiple imputation where the eigenvalue decomposition should be done for several subsamples or several imputed datasets. There is no guarantee that the largest eigenvalue from first dataset corresponds to the largest eigenvalue from the second dataset. The problem of combining results of PCA or exploratory factor analysis at the factor (or principal components) level has been studies in Lovik et al. (2017a).

Alternatively, we have proposed to first estimate the covariance matrix as our parameter of interest, and then perform the eigenvalue decomposition on this single estimated covariance matrix. We have studied this idea in detail and investigated different aspects of it, also compared it with other alternative solutions. Again, the problem is considered in the setting of multiple imputation, but all the findings are also valid for vertical data splitting. This is because, the issue in this case is that the dataset under study is replaced with several datasets. Now these several datasets could come from data splitting or multiple imputation, that would not change the problem, hence, the proposed solutions.

1.6 Software implementation

As most of the methodologies we have developed in this thesis are more useful when implemented as software packages, such implementations are provided. We have used R as the main statistical computing language to implement our proposed methodologies and perform simulation studies and data analysis, but for comparison reasons, we also have used SAS.

Two R packages are provided to use structured horizontal splitting in case of clustered data with covariance structure of the form compound-symmetry and autoregressive of first order (**fastCS**, **fastAR1**). Also, the R package **miscVSS** provides various functions to assist with random and structured vertical splitting. Furthermore, the R package **imi** implemented our proposed iterative multiple imputation procedure. The methodology we have proposed to deal with incomplete data in case of exploratory factor analysis is implemented in the R package **mifa**.

The source codes for all of these R packages are publicly and freely available on author's github account ¹. Every function and method is fully documented and necessary examples are provided. Further information about the implemented methods, how to install them, etc., can be found in Chapter 8.

¹<https://github.com/vahidnassiri>

1.7 Publications

We have published the work we have done during this PhD in form of scientific papers in peer reviewed journal and proceedings. Part of these publications are covered in this thesis, and part of them are not covered. A list of these publications is provided in this section.

1.7.1 Publications covered in this thesis

1. Lisa Hermans, **Vahid Nassiri**, Geert Molenberghs, Michael G. Kenward, Wim Van der Elst, Marc Aerts, and Geert Verbeke. "Clusters With Unequal Size: Maximum Likelihood Versus Weighted Estimation in Large Samples." *Statistica Sinica* 28(3), pp. 1107–1132 (Section 4.1)²
2. Lisa Hermans, **Vahid Nassiri**, Geert Molenberghs, Michael G. Kenward, Wim Van der Elst, Marc Aerts, and Geert Verbeke. "Fast, closed-form, and efficient estimators for hierarchical models with AR (1) covariance and unequal cluster sizes." *Communications in Statistics-Simulation and Computation* 47, no. 5 (2018): 1492–1505. (Section 4.2)³
3. **Vahid Nassiri**, Geert Molenberghs, and Geert Verbeke. "Finite information limit variance-covariance structures: Is the entire

²This publication is also presented in PhD thesis of Lisa Hermans (Hermans, 2019). The author's role in this publication was implementing the methods in R, performing the simulations, and analyzing the case studies.

³See Footnote 2

- dataset needed for analysis?." In *High Performance Computing & Simulation (HPCS), 2016 International Conference on*, pp. 736–742. IEEE, 2016. (Section 5.2)
4. **Vahid Nassiri**, Anna Ivanova, Geert Molenberghs, and Geert Verbeke. "Fast precision estimation in high-dimensional multivariate joint models." *Biometrical Journal* 59, no. 6 (2017): 1221–1231. (Chapter 6)
 5. **Vahid Nassiri**, Geert Molenberghs, Geert Verbek, João Barbosa Breda, "Iterative multiple imputation: a framework to determine the number of imputed datasets" , *The American Statistician* (2019): 1–17. (Section 7.1)
 6. **Vahid Nassiri**, Anikó Lovik, Geert Molenberghs, and Geert Verbeke. "On using multiple imputation for exploratory factor analysis of incomplete data." *Behavior research methods* 50, no. 2 (2018): 501–517. (Section 7.2)

1.7.2 Publications not covered in this thesis

1. Wim Van der Elst, Lisa Hermans, Geert Verbeke, Michael G. Kenward, **Vahid Nassiri**, and Geert Molenberghs. "Unbalanced cluster sizes and rates of convergence in mixed-effects models for clustered data." *Journal of statistical computation and simulation* 86, no. 11 (2016): 2123-2139.
2. Anikó Lovik, **Vahid Nassiri**, Geert Verbeke, Geert Molenberghs,

and An Katrien Sodermans. "Psychometric properties and comparison of different techniques for factor analysis on the Big Five Inventory from a Flemish sample." *Personality and Individual Differences* 117 (2017): 122-129.

3. Anikó Lovik, **Vahid Nassiri**, Geert Verbeke, and Geert Molenberghs. "Combining Factors from Different Factor Analyses Based on Factor Congruence." In *In Wiberg, M., Culpepper, S.A., Janssen, R., González, J., and Molenaar, D. (Eds.) Quantitative Psychology: The 82nd Annual Meeting of the Psychometric Society, Zurich, Switzerland, 2017*, pp. 211-219. New York: Springer, 2018.
4. Karel Van Keer, Jan Van Keer, João Barbosa Breda, **Vahid Nassiri**, Johan Van Cleemput, Luís Abegão Pinto, Ingeborg Stalmans, Evelien Vandewalle, "Retinal oxygen saturation as a non-invasive estimate for mixed venous oxygen saturation and cardiac output" , *Acta Ophthalmologica*, (2019) 97 (2).
5. João Barbosa-Breda, Karel Van Keer, Luis Abegão-Pinto, **Vahid Nassiri**, Geert Molenberghs, Koen Willekens, Evelien Vandewalle, Amândio Rocha-Sousa, and Ingeborg Stalmans. "Improved discrimination between normal-tension and primary open-angle glaucoma with advanced vascular examinations—the Leuven Eye Study." *Acta ophthalmologica*, (2019) 97 (1).
6. João Barbosa-Breda, Danilo Andrade De Jesus, Karel Van Keer,

- Vahid Nassiri**, Geert Molenberghs, Luís Abegão Pinto, Amandio Rocha-Sousa, Evelien Vandewalle, and Ingeborg Stalmans. "AngioOCT peripapillary microvascular density outperforms standard OCT parameters as a discriminant between different glaucoma severity levels—The Leuven Eye Study." *Investigative Ophthalmology & Visual Science*, 59 (9), 4478-4478. 2018.
7. Karel Van Keer, Jan Van Keer, João Barbosa Breda, **Vahid Nassiri**, Cathy De Deyne, Cornelia Genbrugge, Luis Abegao Pinto, Ingeborg Stalmans, and Evelien Vandewalle. "Non-invasive assessment of cerebral oxygenation: A comparison of retinal and transcranial oximetry." *PloS one* 13, no. 1 (2018): e0190612.
 8. João Barbosa Breda, K. Van Keer, L. Abegão Pinto, **Vahid Nassiri**, K. Willekens, E. Vandewalle, A. Rocha Sousa, and I. Stalmans. "Advanced vascular exams improve the accuracy of conventional parameters in distinguishing normal tension from primary open angle glaucoma." *Acta Ophthalmologica* 95 (2017).
 9. Anikó Lovik, **Vahid Nassiri**, Geert Verbeke, and Geert Molenberghs. "A modified Tucker's congruence coefficient for factor matching." In *Methodology (in press)*, 00(00), 00-00, 2019.

CHAPTER 2

MOTIVATING DATASETS

A brief summary of the datasets motivating our research is presented in this Chapter. There are two types of motivating datasets in this thesis: 1- the ones for which using our proposed methodology is necessary to analyze them, 2- the ones that these methodologies are an option, and probably not the best one. The first type of motivating datasets are large data that analyzing them with conventional methods is not feasible, or would take a very long time. As we also need to evaluate our proposed methodologies not only via simulation studies, but in real practice as well, in our second type of motivating datasets, we consider cases that are suitable but not large enough, so the conventional methods could also be applied on them. This way, we could compare the performance

of our proposed alternative methodologies with the well-known and conventional methods.

2.1 A developmental toxicity study

This study investigates the dose-response relationship in mice of the potentially hazardous chemical compound di(2-ethylhexyl)phthalate (DEHP), used in vacuum pumps and as plasticizers for numerous plastic devices made of polyvinyl chloride (Tyl et al., 1988). The developmental toxicity study, conducted in timed-pregnant mice during the period of major organogenesis has attracted much interest in the toxicity of DEHP. The doses selected for the study were 0, 0.025, 0.05, 0.1, and 0.15%, corresponding to a DEHP consumption of 0, 44, 91, 191, and 292 mg/kg/day, respectively.

The dams were sacrificed, slightly prior to normal delivery, and the status of uterine implantation sites recorded. A total of 1082 live fetuses were dissected from the uterus, anesthetized, and examined for external, visceral, and skeletal malformations, as well as for body weight. Our focus will be on the continuous weight outcome. Evidently, fetuses are clustered within mothers; hence the implied association needs to be accommodated in the analysis.

As each mother has a different number of fetuses, we have clusters of different sizes. This would provide a suitable scenario to evaluate structured horizontal splitting approach. Since the data is of a moderate

size, the conventional methods can also be used to fit the models, so we have the chance of comparing the obtained results using such models with our proposed alternative models.

Other than di(2-ethylhexyl)phthalate (DEHP), two other responses are also studied in this thesis, ethylene glycol (EG), Price et al. (1987), and diethylene glycol dimethyl ether (DYME), Price et al. (1985).

2.2 Divorce in Flanders

The big Five Inventory (BFI) is questionnaire formed of 44 questions to measure personality based on five underlying factors: Neuroticism (N), Extraversion (E), Openness to Experience (O), Conscientiousness (C), and Agreeableness (A), see John and Srivastava (1999). A Dutch translation of this questionnaire has been developed and validated by Denissen et al. (2008). The same translated version has been used in Divorce of Flanders project to collect the data.

The Divorce of Flanders dataset is collected at the Centre for Sociological Research, KU Leuven. The data concerned on studying and comparing the personality among three generations in about 4000 Flemish families (Mortelmans et al., 2011). Each family would at most consist of mother, father, step-mother, step-father, one child, grand-mother, and grandfather. The personality is measured using the so-called Big Five Inventory (BFI) score as it is described above. These scores are built upon 5 factors which in total are measured through 44 items.

Although, using factor analysis is required for such data in order to confirm the existence of the expected underlying factors, it cannot answer all of our questions. For example, the researcher wants to see how large are the correlations between different personality aspects and family roles (child, mother, father, etc.). The usual factor analysis would lose most of the hierarchical information in the data.

The hierarchical information we have mentioned comes from the fact that, there are family members who answer 44 questions which themselves will form 5 factors. Therefore, we have five factors combined with family roles as our response variables. If we only consider 3 family roles (child, mother, and father), it will form 15 different responses (5 personality aspects and 3 family roles). In other words, in this example, each of our clusters consists of a family with its members (likely 3 or 5), combined with 5 factors obtained from 44 questions. And we have more than 4000 of such families. Conventional software like SAS would immediately fail to fit such models. But as we will see, splitting this large sample into 3 parts would help to obtain the required results. Therefore, this is an example of case studies where the conventional methods fail to work and our proposed alternative methods are necessary to fit the required models.

It worth to mention that we have well studied and validated these data and the Dutch translation of the questionnaire in case of a Flemish sample, see Lovik et al. (2017b), Lovik et al. (2017c). While validating the Dutch translation for the Flemish sample, in order to deal with

the missing data problem, we also had to develop methodologies to combine multiple imputation (Rubin, 1987; Carpenter and Kenward, 2012) and exploratory factor analysis. Our contribution to this field had also applications in case of data splitting, this will be discussed in Section 7.1. We have also studied this matter in Lovik et al. (2017a).

2.3 Hearing data

To evaluate the hearing performance of a subject, hearing threshold sound pressure levels (measured in dB) are considered. By definition, a hearing threshold is the lowest signal intensity possible to perceive by a subject at a specific frequency. In a study considered in Verbeke and Molenberghs (2000) and Fieuws and Verbeke (2006), hearing thresholds measured in 11 different frequencies between 125 Hz and 8000 Hz for left and right ears obtained on 603 male participants from the Baltimore Longitudinal Study of Ageing, BLSA. The number of visits for each subject which varies between 1 to 15 are unequally spaced.

As one may have already observed, not only we have 22 outcomes (11 frequencies for left and right ears) which should be simultaneously modeled, but the study is longitudinal. Therefore, one may need both random intercepts and random slopes. That means estimating a 44×44 covariance matrix of random effects, as well as the fixed effects. Conventional software like `Proc MIXED` in SAS would immediately fail to estimate such huge a model, while our proposed structured vertical splitting can deal with the issue and provide necessary estimates and

results.

2.4 Leuven diabetes project

In order to study how well diabetes is controlled, three outcomes were measured for each patient at baseline (T_0) and one year later (T_1). These three outcomes of interest were LDL-cholesterol (low-density lipoprotein cholesterol, mg/dl), HbA1c (glycosylated hemoglobin, %), and SBP (systolic blood pressure, mmHg). Although these three variables are continuous, the interest was in expert-specified cut-off values of these outcomes. The cut-off values are defined as $\{< 100, [100, 115), [115, 130), \geq 130\}$ (mg/dl) for LDL-cholesterol, $\{< 7, [7, 8), \geq 8\}\%$ for HbA1c, and $\{\leq 130, (30, 140], (140, 160], > 160\}$ mmHg for SBP. Modelling these 3 ordinal outcomes together provides a suitable platform to study the performance of our proposed methodologies dealing with non-Gaussian data.

Note that, this data is analyzed in Ivanova et al. (2017), and here we only use it as a basis for our simulation studies to evaluate our proposed methodology in case of generalized linear mixed models.

2.5 Amazon book ratings

These data consist of the ratings of the books on the Amazon website which are recently made publicly available (McAuley, 2016). The dataset contains 2,330,066 books, which are rated at least 1 and at most 21,398

times. This is an example of clustered data with large highly unbalanced clusters and a large sample size. Therefore, it provides an ideal situation where the conventional methods would fail and we may need alternative methods to deal with the big data issue.

2.6 Clinical trials in schizophrenia

These data were collected from five double-blind randomized clinical trials to compare the effects of two treatments for chronic schizophrenia: risperidone and conventional antipsychotic agents. Subjects who received doses of risperidone (4–6 mg/day) or an active control (haloperidol, perphenazine, zuclopentixol) have been included in the analysis. Patients were clustered within country, and longitudinal measurements were made on each subject over time. The number of patients ranges from 9 to 128 per country with a total of 2039.

The positive and negative syndrome scale (PANSS) was used to assess the global condition of a patient. This scale is constructed from 30 items, each taking values between 1 and 7, giving an overall range of 30 to 210. PANSS provides an operationalized, drug-sensitive instrument, which is useful for both typological and dimensional assessment of schizophrenia. Depending on the trial, treatment was administered for a duration of 48 weeks with at most 12 monthly measurements. Because not all subjects received treatment at the same time points and, not the same amount, the final dataset is unbalanced. Our analysis shows the AR(1) structure could be a good candidate for modelling the covariance matrix of the

random effects, which makes it a suitable example to illustrate our contribution to structured horizontal splitting based on cluster sizes for AR(1) models.

2.7 Cholesterol data

The cholesterol dataset includes cholesterol levels for 28 patients treated at a Pennsylvania medical center. The cholesterol levels have been recorded on day 2, day 4 and day 14 after an attack for each patient. However, there are 9 missing values for day 14. This dataset was analyzed by Schafer (1997, Chapter 5) and is publicly available in the R package `norm2`. We will use this dataset to illustrate the use of iterative multiple imputation (IMI) in case of Student's t -test.

2.8 Age-related macular degeneration (ARMD)

The data come from a clinical trial in age-related macular degeneration (ARMD), which is a disease of the retina that causes severe central vision loss. The data consist of a multi-center study (17 centers) to evaluate the effect of an experimental treatment based on interferon- α in a group of patients who were randomly allocated to either placebo or interferon- α . The outcome of interest was the change in visual acuity over time. Using standard vision charts, the visual acuity was measured by the number of letters that were correctly read by the patient. The data is used in the context of surrogate endpoint evaluation. The goal of this analyses is to examine if visual acuity at week 24 could be an appropriate surrogate

for the one at week 52, the so-called true endpoint. To this end, the surrogate and the true endpoint have to be modelled jointly. Because of the bivariate nature of the model, coupled with the multi-centre nature of the study, a mixed model is used, by which surrogate evaluation measures are estimated. The data however is highly unbalanced and only has 17 clusters. This makes the iterative algorithms to face with difficulty in convergence. The data can be obtained from the *Surrogate package* in R (Van der Elst et al., 2016).

2.9 Leuven eye study

This is an extensive observational study of glaucoma performed at the ophthalmology department of KU Leuven. This study investigates glaucoma which is one of the leading diseases to cause irreversible vision loss. Early diagnosis of glaucoma could greatly help to delay the vision loss. Therefore, studying various diagnostic methods is of a great importance.

The dataset consists of 141 variables measured in 614 subjects. Various diagnostic tests and procedures are used on subsets of these patients. As measuring all of these variables and performing all diagnostic tests was not feasible for all of the subjects, this dataset exhibits considerable missingness. In fact, no single fully observed subject can be found in this dataset. Considering the size of dataset and amount of missing values, applying multiple imputation and determining the number of imputations is a great challenge in this case. This becomes more important when we

want to have one set of imputed datasets to be used for different analysis. Therefore, iterative multiple imputation could greatly contribute to overcome this challenge.

CHAPTER 3

RANDOM HORIZONTAL SPLITTING

Random horizontal splitting is useful for the cases where the dataset becomes *big* because of number of clusters in there. We have already discussed the splitting pattern as well as the combination rules for this case in Section 1.4. In this chapter we will illustrate this technique to fit a model to a subset of Divorce in the Flanders dataset that could not be fitted with conventional methods and software. First, we explain the research question and our statistical formulation of it. Then we will see how conventional methods would fail in this case, and finally using random horizontal splitting we will fit the model that could not be fitted otherwise.

3.1 The research question

Divorce in Flanders (Mortelmans et al., 2011) dataset presents data from Big Five Inventory (BFI) questionnaire (John and Srivastava, 1999; Denissen et al., 2008) answered by Flemish families. BFI is a questionnaire of 44 items which should be answered with scores from 1 to 5. These 44 questions are measuring 5 aspects of personality: openness to the experience, conscientiousness, extraversion, agreeableness, and neuroticism. Our interest is to study the correlation of each of these 5 aspects of personality between 3 main family roles: mother, father, and child. This would possibly reveal useful patterns in different characteristic qualities and show how they are related between parents, and their child. So the main research question here is: how different aspects of personality are correlated between different family roles. The difficulty arises because the five aspects of personality are latent variables and cannot directly be measured.

A simple way to deal with this problem is to summarize the 44 items into 5 variables using dimension reduction techniques (such as factor analysis via principal component analysis). It should be done for each family role separately, forming 15 different variables. A correlation matrix of these 15 variables would to some extent provide what we need. The first issue with this approach is that it would ignore the intraclass correlation coming from the fact that some of the sample members are coming from the same family.

In other words, we have two sources of correlation here: one as a result of correlation between different personality aspects and family roles, and yet another one that reflects the fact that the subjects are coming from the same family. We are interested in the former. Therefore, a proper method should distinguish between these two.

To properly take this hierarchical structure into account, we propose to define 15 responses formed by all combinations of 5 personality factors and 3 family roles. A mixed model can be used to let all these responses of interest to be correlated. The advantages of this approach over using exploratory factor analysis are:

- The pre-defined structure of the 5 personality factors can be imposed on the 44 items without making any summary (like a principal component). Therefore, this is more in line with confirmatory factor analysis than the exploratory factor analysis.
- A mixed model formulation would let us to separate correlations coming from *being in the same family* from the ones that we actually are interested in.

However, the dis-advantage of this approach is the difficulties of fitting a mixed model with 15 responses to a sample of more than 4000 clusters. In the next section we will provide more details.

3.2 A mixed model solution

We proposed to use a linear mixed model to jointly model all 15 responses that are formed by combining 5 personality factors and 3 family roles. We call these 15 variables factor-role hereafter. Consider y_{ijk} as the response for the i -th factor-role for j -th item in the k -th family. Then We need to fit the following mixed model,

$$y_{ijk} = \beta_i + b_{ij} + \epsilon_{ijk}, \quad (3.1)$$

b_{ij} 's ($i = 1, \dots, 15, j = 1, \dots, m_i$) are the random effects (latent variables) each representing one factor-role and m_i is the number of items corresponds to factor-role i . As we are interested in the associations between all factor-roles, they all will be considered to be correlated following a normal distribution with mean zero and an unstructured covariance matrix D presented in (3.2). In there, the first letter corresponds to the factors (**A** for agreeableness, **C** for conscientiousness, **E** for extraversion, **N** for neuroticism, and **O** for openness,) and the second letter corresponds to the family roles (**c** for child, **m** for mother, and **f** for father). The error terms will also be considered to be correlated

with an unstructured covariance matrix R .

$$D = \begin{pmatrix} d_{Ac} & d_{Ac,Af} & d_{Ac,Am} & d_{Ac,Cc} & d_{Ac,Cf} & d_{Ac,Cm} & d_{Ac,Ec} & d_{Ac,Ef} & d_{Ac,Em} & d_{Ac,Nc} & d_{Ac,Nf} & d_{Ac,Nm} & d_{Ac,Oc} & d_{Ac,Of} & d_{Ac,Om} \\ d_{Af} & d_{Af,Am} & d_{Af,Cc} & d_{Af,Cf} & d_{Af,Cm} & d_{Af,Ec} & d_{Af,Ef} & d_{Af,Em} & d_{Af,Nc} & d_{Af,Nf} & d_{Af,Nm} & d_{Af,Oc} & d_{Af,Of} & d_{Af,Om} \\ d_{Am} & d_{Am,Cc} & d_{Am,Cf} & d_{Am,Cm} & d_{Am,Ec} & d_{Am,Ef} & d_{Am,Em} & d_{Am,Nc} & d_{Am,Nf} & d_{Am,Nm} & d_{Am,Oc} & d_{Am,Of} & d_{Am,Om} \\ d_{Cc} & d_{Cc,Cf} & d_{Cc,Cm} & d_{Cc,Ec} & d_{Cc,Ef} & d_{Cc,Em} & d_{Cc,Nc} & d_{Cc,Nf} & d_{Cc,Nm} & d_{Cc,Oc} & d_{Cc,Of} & d_{Cc,Om} \\ d_{Cf} & d_{Cf,Cm} & d_{Cf,Ec} & d_{Cf,Ef} & d_{Cf,Em} & d_{Cf,Nc} & d_{Cf,Nf} & d_{Cf,Nm} & d_{Cf,Oc} & d_{Cf,Of} & d_{Cf,Om} \\ d_{Cm} & d_{Cm,Ec} & d_{Cm,Ef} & d_{Cm,Em} & d_{Cm,Nc} & d_{Cm,Nf} & d_{Cm,Nm} & d_{Cm,Oc} & d_{Cm,Of} & d_{Cm,Om} \\ d_{Ec} & d_{Ec,Ef} & d_{Ec,Em} & d_{Ec,Nc} & d_{Ec,Nf} & d_{Ec,Nm} & d_{Ec,Oc} & d_{Ec,Of} & d_{Ec,Om} \\ & & & & & & d_{Ef} & d_{Ef,Em} & d_{Ef,Nc} & d_{Ef,Nf} & d_{Ef,Nm} & d_{Ef,Oc} & d_{Ef,Of} & d_{Ef,Om} \\ & & & & & & d_{Em} & d_{Em,Ne} & d_{Em,Nf} & d_{Em,Nm} & d_{Em,Oc} & d_{Em,Of} & d_{Em,Om} \\ & & & & & & d_{Nc} & d_{Nc,Nf} & d_{Nc,Nm} & d_{Nc,Oc} & d_{Nc,Of} & d_{Nc,Om} \\ & & & & & & d_{Nf} & d_{Nf,Nm} & d_{Nf,Oc} & d_{Nf,Of} & d_{Nf,Om} \\ & & & & & & d_{Nm} & d_{Nm,Oc} & d_{Nm,Of} & d_{Nm,Om} \\ & & & & & & d_{Oc} & d_{Oc,Of} & d_{Oc,Om} \\ & & & & & & d_{Of} & d_{Of,Of} & d_{Of,Om} \\ & & & & & & & & d_{Om} \end{pmatrix} \quad (3.2)$$

As one may see in (3.2), by estimating the matrix D , all possible associations between personality factors and family roles can be derived. As it is already briefly discussed, the advantages of using a mixed model for this problem can be summarized as follows:

- Specifying the theory-based model in a straightforward fashion (the same as confirmatory factor analysis).
- Properly taking different sources of correlations into account.
- If required later on, including extra covariates in the model (such as education) is easily possible in an standard way.
- All required associations can be derived and tested in a proper modeling framework.

While considering the above benefits using a mixed model approach is very appealing, the number of parameters in the final model becomes very large. As one may see in (3.2), in the D matrix alone there are

120 parameters to be estimated. Trying to fit the model in (3.1) in PROC MIXED in SAS would lead to **ERROR: The SAS System stopped processing this step because of insufficient memory.**

3.3 A data-splitting based remedy

While the cluster sizes are not large here (at most 3), considering the size of the sample (4460 families), also the number of outcomes of interest (15 factor-roles), one may think of two possible data splitting based solutions: random horizontal splitting, and structured vertical splitting. We may first try the former, and if it does not work, we may try the latter. If none of them can solve the issue, a combination of both methods can be applied (see Section 9.1).

In order to apply random horizontal splitting, we split 4460 families into three roughly equal sized sub-samples with the sizes 1480, 1480, and 1500. Therefore, the proportional weights in (1.7) to combine the results from the three sub-samples can be computed as follows:

$$W = \left(\frac{1480}{4460}, \frac{1480}{4460}, \frac{1500}{4460} \right). \quad (3.3)$$

Now that the sub-samples are assigned and the proper weights are determined, we may fit the mixed model in (3.1) to each of these sub-samples, obtain the parameters, and use combination rules with weights in (3.3) to find the final estimates and their standard errors.

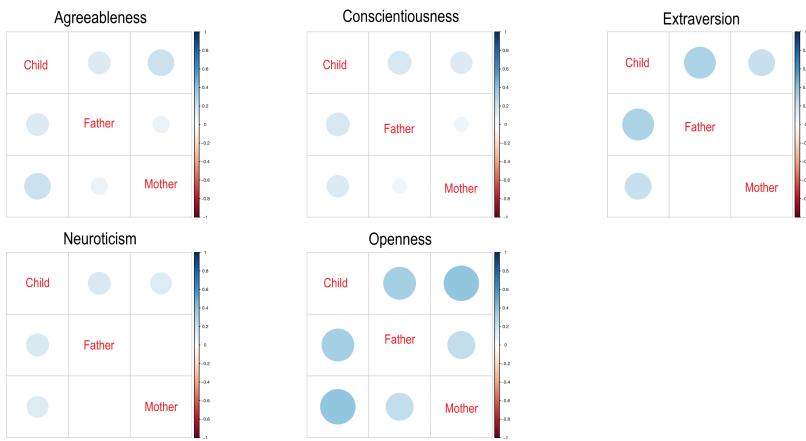


Figure 3.1: Estimated correlation matrix for each aspect of personality between different family roles.

A detailed summary on \tilde{D} (data-splitting based estimate of D) is given in Table 3.1. The estimate for each of the 120 parameters together with standard deviation, 95% confidence interval, z -value and p -value are given in this table. Figure 3.2 shows the 120 parameter estimates in \tilde{D} with their corresponding 95% confidence interval. Just to make drawing conclusions easier, Figure 3.1 shows parts of the correlation matrix corresponding to each personality factor separately.

Table 3.1: D -matrix parameter estimation summary (120 component \tilde{D})

CovParm	Estimate	Std	95%-Lower	95%-Upper	Z-value	P-value
A.child	0.183	0.013	0.158	0.208	14.421	0.000
(A.father,A.child)	0.028	0.010	0.008	0.048	2.784	0.005
A.father	0.172	0.008	0.156	0.187	21.630	0.000
(A.mother,A.child)	0.040	0.009	0.022	0.057	4.326	0.000

(A.mother,A.father)	0.015	0.007	0.002	0.029	2.303	0.021
A.mother	0.176	0.007	0.162	0.191	24.117	0.000
(C.child,A.child)	0.081	0.011	0.060	0.103	7.417	0.000
(C.child,A.father)	0.020	0.012	-0.004	0.044	1.641	0.101
(C.child,A.mother)	0.008	0.011	-0.014	0.030	0.712	0.477
C.child	0.318	0.018	0.282	0.354	17.314	0.000
(C.father,A.child)	0.011	0.011	-0.011	0.033	0.965	0.334
(C.father,A.father)	0.096	0.006	0.084	0.108	15.488	0.000
(C.father,A.mother)	0.009	0.007	-0.005	0.024	1.271	0.204
(C.father,C.child)	0.045	0.013	0.018	0.071	3.310	0.001
C.father	0.211	0.009	0.193	0.229	23.220	0.000
(C.mother,A.child)	0.020	0.010	0.000	0.039	2.002	0.045
(C.mother,A.father)	0.024	0.007	0.010	0.039	3.294	0.001
(C.mother,A.mother)	0.101	0.006	0.090	0.113	17.204	0.000
(C.mother,C.child)	0.042	0.012	0.018	0.065	3.479	0.000
(C.mother,C.father)	0.015	0.008	-0.001	0.031	1.845	0.065
C.mother	0.233	0.009	0.216	0.250	26.458	0.000
(E.child,A.child)	0.104	0.012	0.081	0.126	8.933	0.000
(E.child,A.father)	0.008	0.013	-0.018	0.033	0.593	0.553
(E.child,A.mother)	-0.002	0.012	-0.025	0.020	-0.212	0.832
(E.child,C.child)	0.076	0.014	0.049	0.102	5.510	0.000
(E.child,C.father)	0.039	0.015	0.011	0.068	2.693	0.007
(E.child,C.mother)	0.018	0.013	-0.007	0.043	1.434	0.152
E.child	0.375	0.020	0.335	0.414	18.516	0.000
(E.father,A.child)	0.020	0.013	-0.007	0.046	1.470	0.142
(E.father,A.father)	0.107	0.007	0.093	0.122	14.426	0.000
(E.father,A.mother)	0.004	0.009	-0.014	0.021	0.433	0.665
(E.father,C.child)	0.021	0.016	-0.010	0.052	1.309	0.191
(E.father,C.father)	0.132	0.008	0.116	0.147	16.313	0.000
(E.father,C.mother)	0.012	0.010	-0.008	0.031	1.180	0.238
(E.father,E.child)	0.116	0.017	0.083	0.150	6.804	0.000
E.father	0.359	0.013	0.333	0.385	27.247	0.000
(E.mother,A.child)	0.025	0.012	0.002	0.048	2.111	0.035
(E.mother,A.father)	0.003	0.009	-0.014	0.020	0.338	0.735
(E.mother,A.mother)	0.083	0.007	0.070	0.097	11.931	0.000

(E.mother,C.child)	-0.008	0.014	-0.036	0.020	-0.555	0.579
(E.mother,C.father)	0.010	0.010	-0.008	0.029	1.099	0.272
(E.mother,C.mother)	0.141	0.008	0.126	0.157	17.899	0.000
(E.mother,E.child)	0.085	0.015	0.056	0.115	5.700	0.000
(E.mother,E.father)	-0.000	0.012	-0.023	0.022	-0.039	0.969
E.mother	0.393	0.013	0.367	0.418	30.284	0.000
(N.child,A.child)	-0.136	0.013	-0.162	-0.110	-10.276	0.000
(N.child,A.father)	-0.010	0.015	-0.038	0.019	-0.658	0.511
(N.child,A.mother)	0.017	0.013	-0.009	0.043	1.253	0.210
(N.child,C.child)	-0.069	0.015	-0.099	-0.038	-4.446	0.000
(N.child,C.father)	0.007	0.016	-0.025	0.039	0.413	0.679
(N.child,C.mother)	-0.030	0.014	-0.058	-0.001	-2.055	0.040
(N.child,E.child)	-0.196	0.017	-0.229	-0.162	-11.480	0.000
(N.child,E.father)	-0.034	0.019	-0.072	0.004	-1.773	0.076
(N.child,E.mother)	-0.046	0.017	-0.080	-0.013	-2.699	0.007
(N.child,N.Child)	0.490	0.026	0.439	0.540	18.976	0.000
(N.father,A.child)	-0.023	0.014	-0.051	0.005	-1.602	0.109
(N.father,A.father)	-0.152	0.008	-0.168	-0.136	-18.611	0.000
(N.father,A.mother)	-0.004	0.010	-0.023	0.015	-0.403	0.687
(N.father,C.child)	0.019	0.017	-0.015	0.052	1.079	0.281
(N.father,C.father)	-0.124	0.009	-0.141	-0.108	-14.577	0.000
(N.father,C.mother)	-0.017	0.011	-0.038	0.004	-1.570	0.116
(N.father,E.child)	-0.023	0.018	-0.059	0.014	-1.223	0.221
(N.father,E.father)	-0.211	0.011	-0.232	-0.190	-19.843	0.000
(N.father,E.mother)	-0.002	0.013	-0.026	0.023	-0.130	0.897
(N.father, N.child)	0.072	0.021	0.031	0.113	3.446	0.001
(N.father,N.father)	0.404	0.015	0.375	0.434	26.868	0.000
(N.mother,A.child)	-0.030	0.013	-0.055	-0.006	-2.411	0.016
(N.mother,A.father)	0.000	0.010	-0.018	0.019	0.031	0.975
(N.mother,A.mother)	-0.129	0.008	-0.144	-0.114	-16.961	0.000
(N.mother,C.child)	-0.018	0.015	-0.048	0.011	-1.212	0.226
(N.mother,C.father)	0.002	0.010	-0.018	0.023	0.240	0.810
(N.mother,C.mother)	-0.117	0.008	-0.133	-0.101	-14.193	0.000
(N.mother,E.child)	-0.050	0.016	-0.081	-0.019	-3.142	0.002
(N.mother,E.father)	0.008	0.013	-0.017	0.033	0.647	0.518

(N.mother,E.mother)	-0.243	0.011	-0.264	-0.222	-22.971	0.000
(N.mother,N.child)	0.067	0.018	0.031	0.102	3.685	0.000
(N.mother,N.father)	-0.001	0.014	-0.028	0.026	-0.060	0.952
N.mother	0.428	0.015	0.399	0.457	29.154	0.000
(O.child,A.child)	0.028	0.010	0.008	0.048	2.738	0.006
(O.child,A.father)	-0.005	0.011	-0.027	0.016	-0.486	0.627
(O.child,A.mother)	0.002	0.010	-0.018	0.022	0.201	0.841
(O.child,C.child)	0.026	0.012	0.003	0.050	2.173	0.030
(O.child,C.father)	0.015	0.013	-0.010	0.039	1.172	0.241
(O.child,C.mother)	-0.001	0.011	-0.023	0.020	-0.129	0.897
(O.child,E.child)	0.092	0.013	0.066	0.117	7.032	0.000
(O.child,E.father)	0.032	0.015	0.003	0.061	2.156	0.031
(O.child,E.mother)	0.039	0.013	0.013	0.065	2.921	0.003
(O.child,N.child)	-0.024	0.014	-0.052	0.004	-1.666	0.096
(O.child,N.father)	-0.009	0.016	-0.040	0.022	-0.560	0.576
(O.child,N.mother)	-0.035	0.014	-0.063	-0.007	-2.442	0.015
O.child	0.284	0.016	0.252	0.315	17.484	0.000
(O.father,A.child)	0.002	0.012	-0.021	0.025	0.155	0.877
(O.father,A.father)	0.041	0.007	0.028	0.054	6.294	0.000
(O.father,A.mother)	0.025	0.008	0.010	0.041	3.198	0.001
(O.father,C.child)	-0.035	0.014	-0.063	-0.008	-2.496	0.013
(O.father,C.father)	0.057	0.007	0.043	0.071	8.103	0.000
(O.father,C.mother)	0.006	0.009	-0.011	0.024	0.711	0.477
(O.father,E.child)	0.028	0.015	-0.001	0.058	1.892	0.059
(O.father,E.father)	0.137	0.009	0.120	0.154	15.617	0.000
(O.father,E.mother)	0.010	0.010	-0.010	0.030	0.966	0.334
(O.father,N.child)	-0.016	0.017	-0.049	0.018	-0.931	0.352
(O.father,N.father)	-0.065	0.009	-0.083	-0.047	-7.179	0.000
(O.father,N.mother)	-0.014	0.011	-0.036	0.008	-1.254	0.210
(O.father,O.child)	0.095	0.013	0.069	0.120	7.255	0.000
O.father	0.281	0.011	0.259	0.302	25.880	0.000
(O.mother,A.child)	0.026	0.011	0.005	0.048	2.386	0.017
(O.mother,A.father)	-0.005	0.008	-0.021	0.011	-0.641	0.522
(O.mother,A.mother)	0.047	0.006	0.034	0.059	7.395	0.000
(O.mother,C.child)	-0.006	0.013	-0.032	0.020	-0.460	0.645

(O.mother,C.father)	-0.024	0.009	-0.041	-0.006	-2.657	0.008
(O.mother,C.mother)	0.054	0.007	0.041	0.068	7.824	0.000
(O.mother,E.child)	0.014	0.014	-0.013	0.041	0.993	0.321
(O.mother,E.father)	-0.007	0.011	-0.028	0.015	-0.612	0.540
(O.mother,E.mother)	0.166	0.009	0.149	0.184	18.808	0.000
(O.mother,N.child)	-0.017	0.016	-0.048	0.013	-1.105	0.269
(O.mother,N.father)	0.013	0.012	-0.010	0.036	1.115	0.265
(O.mother,N.mother)	-0.100	0.009	-0.118	-0.082	-11.059	0.000
(O.mother,O.child)	0.117	0.012	0.093	0.141	9.487	0.000
(O.mother,O.father)	0.072	0.010	0.053	0.091	7.400	0.000
O.mother	0.314	0.011	0.292	0.335	28.862	0.000

Interesting observations can be made from the results in Table 3.1. For example, considering only the point estimates of correlations, we may see in case of Agreeableness, the correlation of mother and child is larger than the correlation of father and child. The same is true for Openness to experience. However, for Extraversion, this is larger for father and child. In case of Consciousness and Neuroticism, the correlations are more or less similar. Note that, the correlations are not that large but still comparisons would be beneficial.

3.4 How precise are we?

As it was discussed, while data splitting would help to decrease the computation time or solve an infeasible problem, this all will come at a price: efficiency loss. Usually, it is not possible to quantify and study this efficiency loss, as the conventional maximum likelihood is not feasible,

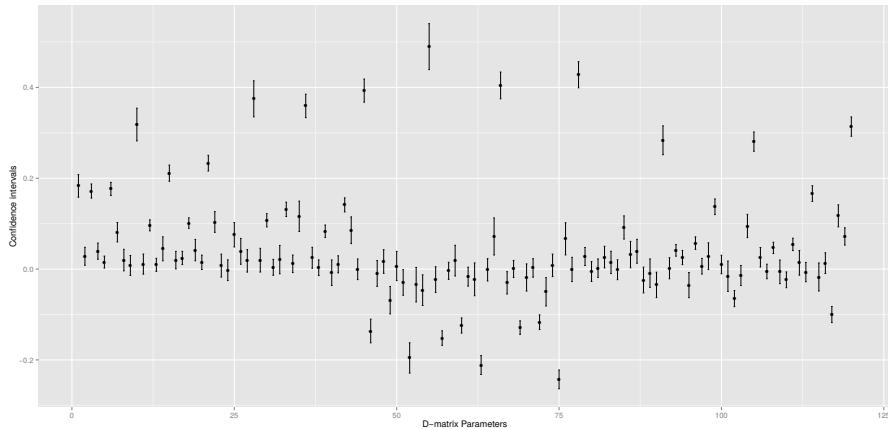


Figure 3.2: 120 components of \tilde{D} and their 95% confidence intervals

but one can have an idea about it by using both methods on the same problem but in a smaller scale. In this section we study the estimates using sample splitting in some sub-problems where the likelihood is still feasible to compute. This way the performance of sample splitting can be compared with the full sample likelihood.

The sub-models would still include all family roles, but the personality factors are considered separately. Therefore, each time we only have 3 outcomes of interest. Table 3.2 shows the results for matrix D . As one may see, the results of sample splitting and full sample are very similar. This would provide a greater degree of confidence in what we have obtained for all of the 15 responses using random horizontal splitting.

3.5 Conclusions

Random horizontal splitting is not specific to clustered data, so our main concern in this thesis is on the 3 other types of splitting, but as it is illustrated in this chapter, it could already solve a difficult problem without the need to get involved in more complicated splitting patterns such as structured vertical splitting. Therefore, if applicable, we would always suggest to first try random horizontal splitting and if it cannot solve the issue move to more complicated splitting methods. Also, in case of large sample sizes, it is a good practice to combine the more complicated methods with random horizontal splitting to achieve better computation times.

Table 3.2: Comparing full sample and sample random horizontal splitting results for each factor separately.

Factor	Parameter	Estimate		Std	
		Split	Full	Split	Full
Agreeableness	child	0.176	0.186	0.013	0.013
	(father,child)	0.027	0.027	0.010	0.010
	father	0.176	0.170	0.008	0.008
	(mother,child)	0.044	0.042	0.009	0.009
	(mother,father)	0.021	0.015	0.007	0.007
	mother	0.171	0.175	0.007	0.007
Conscientiousness	child	0.275	0.320	0.017	0.018
	(father,child)	0.044	0.046	0.013	0.014
	father	0.202	0.210	0.009	0.009
	(mother,child)	0.042	0.044	0.011	0.012
	(mother,father)	0.019	0.013	0.008	0.008
	mother	0.212	0.231	0.008	0.009
Extraversion	child	0.324	0.374	0.019	0.020
	(father,child)	0.076	0.111	0.016	0.017
	father	0.298	0.355	0.012	0.013
	(mother,child)	0.074	0.083	0.014	0.015
	(mother,father)	0.014	-0.000	0.010	0.012
	mother	0.319	0.389	0.011	0.013
Neuroticism	child	0.400	0.490	0.023	0.026
	(father,child)	0.055	0.064	0.018	0.021
	father	0.321	0.400	0.013	0.015
	(mother,child)	0.055	0.061	0.016	0.018
	(mother,father)	0.011	-0.001	0.012	0.014
	mother	0.346	0.424	0.013	0.015
Openness	child	0.255	0.283	0.016	0.016
	(father,child)	0.070	0.095	0.012	0.013
	father	0.245	0.278	0.010	0.011
	(mother,child)	0.095	0.119	0.012	0.012
	(mother,father)	0.063	0.071	0.009	0.010
	mother	0.269	0.311	0.010	0.011

CHAPTER 4

STRUCTURED HORIZONTAL SPLITTING

We have briefly explained the idea behind structured horizontal splitting in Section 1.4.2. In this chapter two applications of this method will be introduced, expanded, and discussed. In both cases we consider clustered data, in Section 4.1 these clustered data have a covariance matrix with a compound-symmetry structure and in Section 4.2 their covariance matrix will have an autoregressive of first order (AR1) structure.

4.1 Clusters with unequal size: maximum likelihood versus weighted estimation in large samples

4.1.1 Introduction

Much statistical theory is derived under the paradigm of a fixed sample size. However, there are many common practical settings in which this paradigm does not hold. Examples include sequential trials, where the trial may be stopped early at a number of time points during accrual, because of the strength, or lack, of a treatment effect; incomplete data in longitudinal studies or surveys; longitudinal data with random measurement occasions; and censored survival data. Molenberghs et al. (2014) provide an overview of such situations.

Here, we focus on hierarchical (or clustered) data with unequal cluster sizes.

Clustering is taken in its broadest sense, encompassing longitudinal data, family-based studies, toxicology (Aerts et al. (2002)), agricultural experiments, multi-level designs in the social and behavioral sciences, and so on. In longitudinal trials, it is not uncommon to plan for the same number of measurements to be taken per study subject, often at a common set of time points. If all data were collected according to protocol, the cluster size would be fixed. However, even in such studies, cluster sizes are often *de facto* random because of incompleteness in the

data. In many random cluster size settings there may be associations between outcomes and cluster size. In part of the literature, this is termed ‘informative cluster size’ and a suite of methods has been proposed to accommodate this situation, many based on inverse probability weighting (Williamson et al., 2003; Benhin et al., 2005; Hoffman et al., 2001; Cong et al., 2007; Chiang and Lee, 2008; Wang et al., 2011; Aerts et al., 2011). Unequal cluster sizes can occur for any outcome type, including continuous, binary, categorical, count, and event time.

Unequal cluster sizes may or may not be governed by a stochastic mechanism. For example, they can be unequal by design choice, without being stochastic; e.g., when a sample is selected in each town proportion to the population size. Litter sizes in pregnant rodents will truly be stochastic. When stochastic, the mechanism is completely random when it depends on neither observed nor unobserved data; it is random when it depends on observed but, given these, not on unobserved data; other mechanisms are termed non-random. In the literature, mechanisms other than complete random are often termed informative. Although an important issue, we do not focus on informative cluster sizes here. Attention is confined to the case where cluster size is unequal, but independent of both observed and unobserved outcomes. In doing so we distinguish issues that stem purely from the non-constant nature of the cluster size, from those that result from the association between cluster size and outcome. We focus on the differences between the case of a fixed cluster size that is common to all clusters, and that of a fluctuating cluster size, whether for design reasons or randomly. In particular, the

joint modelling of outcomes and cluster size is not considered.

As a simple, yet non-trivial, clustering paradigm, we consider the normal compound-symmetry (CS) model, which is a three-parameter multivariate normal model, with a common mean μ , a common variance $\sigma^2 + d$, and a common covariance d . Molenberghs et al. (2011) studied this case in the context of so-called split-sample methodology: they proposed a particular form of pseudo-likelihood where a sample is subdivided into M subsamples, which are separately analyzed as if they were unrelated, after which the results are averaged using appropriate weights, leading to proper point and precision estimates. Pseudo-likelihood has received considerable attention (Molenberghs and Verbeke, 2005, Ch. 9, 12, 21, 24, 25)); (Aerts et al., 2002, Ch. 6, 7).

Assume that there are c_k clusters of size n_k , $k = 1, \dots, K$. For ease of development, we allow for some of the n_k to be equal, which is useful when a subgroup of clusters that is of the same size is chosen to be sub-divided (because there are very many or for other reasons). A natural split is made with respect to the cluster size, i.e., as if every cluster size defines its own stratum.

Evidently, for medium to large sample sizes, full maximum likelihood or Bayesian inferences are statistically optimal and computationally feasible; hence, the work done here might be less relevant. However, with really big data, where the number of independent clusters runs in the millions or beyond, and/or in settings where the number of measurements per cluster becomes very large (e.g., in meta-analysis), maximum likelihood

eventually becomes prohibitive in terms of computation time. At the other end of the spectrum, in very small samples (e.g., in small-area epidemiology applications, or when studies are conducted in so-called orphan diseases), maximum likelihood estimates may become unstable, to the point where it is difficult to obtain convergence. This may be due, for example, to relatively flat likelihood functions. The non-iterative nature of our proposal removes such issues. Small samples refers here to a small number of clusters; the clusters themselves may consist of smaller or larger numbers of within-cluster replication. We are not the first to consider these issues. Van der Elst et al. (2015) considered multiple imputation to bring clusters to the same size before applying maximum likelihood. If done with care, convergence problems are drastically reduced. Williamson et al. (2003) and Follmann et al. (2003) proposed so-called multiple outputation, to repeatedly create independent samples by randomly selecting one member per cluster. To ensure that correlation is taken into account, combination rules reminiscent of multiple imputation are then applied to combine inferences from the samples drawn. These methods are based on repeated sampling and come at computational cost for high-dimensional data (Sikorska et al. (2013a)). Therefore, in this paper, the focus is on entirely non-iterative methods, bringing together the advantages of balanced data and simple averaging methodology. A consequence of our approach is the need for applying weights when combining results from the K strata. We establish how results on incomplete sufficient statistics in the context of weighted averages (Molenberghs et al., 2014; Hermans

et al., 2018a) imply that there may be no optimal set of weights. Given this, we propose pragmatically attractive weights, in terms of efficiency, bias, and computational ease.

The remainder of the paper is organized as follows. Two motivating datasets are described in Section 4.1.2. In Section 4.1.3 essential background material on incomplete sufficient statistics is presented. The compound-symmetry model is introduced in Section 4.1.4, and a review is provided of the relevant incompleteness results from Hermans et al. (2018a), together with implications for likelihood-based estimation. Background from the pseudo-likelihood-based split-sample method is given in Supplementary Material Section A.4.2. A general split-sample approach to the CS model is provided in Section 4.1.5, and a number of specific but practically relevant cases are considered. Details about the specifics for the CS case are presented in Section 4.1.6. Section 4.1.7 is dedicated to a simulation study, examining situations for which there are no closed forms on the one hand, and studying numerical performance (speed and convergence) on the other. The data, described in Section 4.1.2, are analyzed in Section 4.1.8. Ramifications and recommendations for practice are offered in Section 4.1.9.

4.1.2 Developmental toxicity study sets

Data from the Research Triangle Institute under contract to the National Toxicology Program of the U.S.A. (NTP data), are analyzed. These developmental toxicity studies investigate the effects in mice of three

Table 4.1: Developmental Toxicity Study (DEHP). Summary data by dose group.

dose	# dams with		# live fetuses	average	
	implants	viable implants		litter size	weight
0 mg/kg/day	30	30	330	13.2	0.9483
44 mg/kg/day	26	26	288	11.1	0.9592
91 mg/kg/day	26	26	277	10.7	0.8977
191 mg/kg/day	24	17	137	8.1	0.8509
292 mg/kg/day	25	9	50	5.6	0.6906

chemicals: di(2-ethylhexyl)phthalate (DEHP) (Tyl et al., 1988) ethylene glycol (EG) Price et al. (1985), and diethylene glycol dimethyl ether (DYME) Price et al. (1987). The studies were conducted in timed-pregnant mice during the period of major organogenesis. The dams were sacrificed, just prior to normal delivery, and the status of uterine implantation sites recorded. The outcome of interest here is fetal weight. Summary data from the DEHP trial are presented in Table 4.1. The design for EG and DYME is similar. It is clear from the table that average litter size is depleted with increasing dose, as is the average weight.

4.1.3 Incomplete sufficient statistics

A statistic $k(Y)$ of a random variable Y , with Y belonging to a family P_θ , is complete if, for every measurable function $g(\cdot)$, independent of θ , $E[g\{k(Y)\}] = 0$ for all θ , implies that $P_\theta[g\{k(Y)\} = 0] = 1$ for all θ (Casella and Berger, 2002). The Lehman-Scheff  theorem (Casella and Berger, 2002) states that, if a statistic is unbiased, complete, and

sufficient for a parameter θ , then it leads to the best mean-unbiased estimator for θ , while Basu's theorem (Basu, 1955) has it that statistic that is both boundedly complete and sufficient is independent of any ancillary statistic. As has been shown in the sequential trial context, a lack of completeness does not preclude the existence of estimators with very good properties (Molenberghs et al., 2014).

Liu and Hall (1999) established the incompleteness of the sufficient statistic for a clinical trial with a stopping rule, for the case of normally distributed endpoints. Liu and Hall (1999) generalized this result to the entire exponential family. Molenberghs et al. (2014) and Milanzi et al. (2016) broadened it further to a stochastic rather than a deterministic stopping rule, hence encompassing the case of a completely random sample size. Indeed, it would seem at first sight that this latter case is standard, because the sample size is unrelated to the data, whether observed or not. Yet, even in this case, completeness no longer holds. What is more, incompleteness holds when the cluster size is non-constant for whatever reason.

4.1.4 The compound-symmetry model

Let \mathbf{Y} be a vector of length n , with $\mathbf{Y} \sim N(\mu \mathbf{1}_n, \sigma^2 I_n + dJ_n)$. In general, both \mathbf{Y} and n are random variables.

Suppose that there is a sample of N independent clusters, among which K different cluster sizes n_k ($k = 1, \dots, K$) are distinguished. Let the multiplicity of cluster size n_k be equal to c_k . Evidently, $N = \sum_{k=1}^K c_k$.

Denote the outcome vector for the i th ($i = 1, \dots, c_k$) replicate among the clusters of size n_k by $\mathbf{Y}_i^{(k)}$. We first show incompleteness of the sufficient statistic, then turn to likelihood estimation. For both, we start from the log-likelihood function.

Incompleteness

The data-dependent terms in the log-likelihood can be written as:

$$\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{k=1}^K \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} -\frac{1}{2} \left(\mathbf{Y}_i^{(k)} - \mu \mathbf{1}_{n_k} \right)' \left(\sigma^2 I_{n_k} + d J_{n_k} \right)^{-1} \left(\mathbf{Y}_i^{(k)} - \mu \mathbf{1}_{n_k} \right) \\
&= \sum_{k=1}^K \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} -\frac{1}{2} \left(\mathbf{Y}_i^{(k)} - \mu \mathbf{1}_{n_k} \right)' \left(I_{n_k} - \frac{d}{\sigma^2 + n_k d} J_{n_k} \right) \left(\mathbf{Y}_i^{(k)} - \mu \mathbf{1}_{n_k} \right) \\
&= \sum_{k=1}^K \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \frac{\mu}{\sigma^2 + n_k d} \left(\sum_{j=1}^{n_k} Y_{ij}^{(k)} \right) - \frac{1}{2\sigma^2} \left(\sum_{k=1}^K \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \sum_{j=1}^{n_k} Y_{ij}^{(k)2} \right) \\
&\quad + \sum_{k=1}^K \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \frac{d}{2\sigma^2(\sigma^2 + n_k d)} \left(\sum_{j=1}^{n_k} Y_{ij}^{(k)} \right)^2,
\end{aligned} \tag{4.1}$$

where I indicates an identity matrix and J indicates a matrix of ones. The three terms in (4.1) are qualitatively different. Indeed, the middle one corresponds to a single sufficient statistic, the sum of all squares across clusters, while the first and last split into as many sufficient statistics as there are unique cluster sizes.

Hermans et al. (2018a) proved a characterization of incompleteness, essentially stating that when the dimension of the sufficient statistic is

larger than the dimension of the parameter vector, the sufficient statistic is no longer complete. More details can be found in Supplementary Materials Section A.1. This sharp division also occurs when studying certain properties of the maximum likelihood estimator.

Likelihood-based Estimation of the CS Model

Similar in spirit to (4.1), but now using all terms, the log-likelihood can be written as

$$\ell(\mu, \sigma^2, d) = \sum_{k=1}^K \ell_k(\mu, \sigma^2, d), \quad (4.2)$$

with the cluster size specific log-likelihood term

$$\begin{aligned} \ell_k(\mu, \sigma^2, d) &= -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \left\{ \ln \left[\sigma^{2n_k} + n_k \sigma^{2(n_k-1)} d \right] \right. \\ &\quad \left. + (\mathbf{Y}_i^{(k)} - \mu \mathbf{1}_{n_k})' \frac{1}{\sigma^2} \left(I_{n_k} - \frac{d}{\sigma^2 + n_k d} J_{n_k} \right) (\mathbf{Y}_i^{(k)} - \mu \mathbf{1}_{n_k}) \right\}. \end{aligned} \quad (4.3)$$

Using derivations similar to those in Molenberghs et al. (2011), the cluster size specific log-likelihood can be maximized analytically *assuming that there is a separate parameter per cluster size*. By replacing $\ell_k(\mu, \sigma^2, d)$ by $\ell_k(\mu_k, \sigma_k^2, d_k)$, we can consider the kernel of the log-likelihood, in general for K cluster sizes, and allowing for the parameter vector to

change with cluster size:

$$\ell \left(\{\mu_k\}_k, \left\{ \sigma_k^2 \right\}_k, \{d_k\}_k \right) \propto -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=1}^K \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \left\{ \ln |\Sigma_{n_k}| + \left(\mathbf{y}_i^{(k)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{n_k} \right)' \Sigma_{n_k}^{-1} \left(\mathbf{y}_i^{(k)} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{n_k} \right) \right\}, \quad (4.4)$$

where $\boldsymbol{\mu}_k = \mu_k \mathbf{1}_{n_k}$, $\Sigma_{n_k} = \sigma_k^2 I_{n_k} + d_k J_{n_k}$. The score functions are presented in Supplementary Materials Section A.2. Solving these score functions (A.2.1)-(A.2.1) leads to:

$$\hat{\mu}_k = \frac{1}{c_k n_k} \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \sum_{j=1}^{n_k} Y_{ij}^{(k)}, \quad (4.5)$$

$$\hat{\sigma}_k^2 = \frac{1}{c_k n_k (n_k - 1)} \left(n_k \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)'} \mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)} - \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)'} J_{n_k} \mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)} \right), \quad (4.6)$$

$$\hat{d}_k = \frac{1}{c_k n_k (n_k - 1)} \left(\sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)'} J_{n_k} \mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)} - \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)'} \mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)} \right), \quad (4.7)$$

where $\mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)} = (\mathbf{Y}_i^{(k)} - \mu_k \mathbf{1}_{n_k})$.

When the cluster size is constant, the compound-symmetry model has closed form ML estimators, given by (4.5)–(4.7). Closed-form estimators for the variance-covariance matrix of the estimator exist as well (Molenberghs et al., 2011). For the mean, the variance is:

$$\text{var}(\hat{\mu}_k) = \frac{\sigma_k^2 + n_k d_k}{c_k n_k}. \quad (4.8)$$

The expression for the variance-covariance structure of $(\hat{\sigma}_k^2, \hat{d}_k)$ is:

$$\text{var} \begin{pmatrix} \widehat{\sigma_k^2} \\ \widehat{d_k} \end{pmatrix} = \frac{2\sigma_k^4}{c_k n_k (n_k - 1)} \begin{pmatrix} n_k & -1 \\ -1 & \frac{\sigma_k^4 + 2(n_k - 1)d_k\sigma_k^2 + n_k(n_k - 1)d_k^2}{\sigma_k^4} \end{pmatrix}. \quad (4.9)$$

The mean parameter is independent of the variance components.

These results can be used when a separate parameter vector is estimated for each of the cluster sizes and, as a special case, when there is only one cluster size. Four features of use in what follows are: (a) there are closed forms; (b) the sufficient statistic is complete; (c) the estimator is unique minimum variance unbiased; (d) the mean parameter estimator and the variance parameter estimator are independent.

These results are lost when $K \geq 2$. We briefly sketch the lack of closed-form solutions in this case in Supplementary Materials Section A.2.2.

The lack of a closed form is well known, but we highlight a few relevant features here. More detail is given in Supplementary Materials Section A.3, where we show

$$\widehat{\mu} = \frac{\sum_{k=1}^K \frac{n_k c_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d} \widehat{\mu}_k}{\sum_{k=1}^K \frac{n_k c_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d}}. \quad (4.10)$$

Examining (4.10) suggests weighted averages:

$$\tilde{\mu} = \sum_{k=1}^K a_k \widehat{\mu}_k, \quad \tilde{\sigma^2} = \sum_{k=1}^K b_k \widehat{\sigma_k^2}, \quad \tilde{d} = \sum_{k=1}^K g_k \widehat{d}_k. \quad (4.11)$$

This idea is similar to that in Molenberghs et al. (2011), who split a sample in sub-samples, analyzed each separately, and then combined the result in an overall estimator. They considered splits in both dependent and independent sub-samples. Dependent samples occur when very long sequences of repeated measures are collected, which are then sub-divided for convenience. This approach is not of use here. Independent samples arise when there are many independent replicates, i.e., a large number of clusters. They studied the CS case, but only for a single cluster size. The total number of clusters was then split into M parts comprising an equal number of clusters. We modify these ideas to the case of unequal cluster sizes, with a variable number of clusters per split.

4.1.5 Split-sample methods for clusters of variable size

The derivations are based on general pseudo-likelihood principles, reviewed in Supplementary Materials Section A.4. We first make generic the setting at the beginning of Section 4.1.4. Let there be a sample of N independent clusters. Partition the sample into K sub-samples, with c_k independent and identically distributed clusters in sub-sample k ; $N = \sum_{k=1}^K c_k$. $\mathbf{Y}_i^{(k)}$ remains the outcome vector for replicate i in sub-sample k .

Subjects in different sub-samples are allowed to have the same distribution, but subjects in the same sub-sample *must* have the same distribution. This covers the running example of CS clusters, partitioned according to cluster size. However, it is possible to further sub-divide

such a sub-sample in various sub-samples, all with the same cluster size. This is sensible, for example, in very large databases. An extreme example follows when sub-samples consist of a single independent replicate, useful, for example, in a meta-analysis with large individual studies. This limiting situation can also be considered with CS data, because all clusters (except those of size 1) contribute to all three parameters.

Consider pseudo-likelihood in this general case (see also Eq. A.4.5). Assume that $\boldsymbol{\theta}^*$ is a vector of length p , and that each $\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k$ is a separate copy of $\boldsymbol{\theta}^*$. Then it can be shown that the generic combination rules are

$$\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^* = \sum_{k=1}^K A_k \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k, \quad (4.12)$$

$$\text{var}(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^*) = \sum_{k=1}^K A_k V_k A'_k, \quad (4.13)$$

with $V_k = I_0(\boldsymbol{\theta}_k)^{-1}$. We use the symbol $\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^*$ to emphasize that this is not necessarily the maximum likelihood estimator even though, in our formalism, $\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k$ is the maximum likelihood estimator when restricting attention to sub-sample k . Equation (4.13) is appropriate only when the weights A_k are free of the parameters to be estimated. We return to this at the end of the section.

Weighting Schemes Not every choice of the A_k leads to an unbiased estimator. To enforce unbiasedness, consider the requirement

$$\boldsymbol{\theta} = E(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^*) = \sum_{k=1}^K A_k E(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k) = \left(\sum_{k=1}^K A_k \right) \boldsymbol{\theta},$$

whence $I_p = \sum_{k=1}^K A_k$. This requirement is satisfied for (A.4.6). This suggests two obvious choices:

Constant weights. Set $A_k = (1/K)I_p$.

Proportional weights. Set $A_k = (c_k/N)I_p$.

Constant weights are the clear choice when all subjects are i.i.d. and partitioning is in sub-samples of equal size. Proportional weights are called for in the i.i.d. case, with sub-samples of varying size.

Consider optimal weights through the objective function

$$Q = \sum_{k=1}^K A_k V_k A'_k - \Lambda \left(\sum_{k=1}^K A_k - I_p \right),$$

where Λ is a matrix of Lagrange multipliers. Taking the first derivative of Q w.r.t. A_k leads to $A_k = \Lambda V_k^{-1}/2$. Because the A_k sum to the identity, $\Lambda = 2 \left(\sum_{m=1}^K V_m^{-1} \right)^{-1}$ and we have the following.

Optimal weights. These take the form:

$$A_k^{\text{opt}} = \left(\sum_{m=1}^K V_m^{-1} \right)^{-1} V_k^{-1}. \quad (4.14)$$

With this choice, (4.12)–(4.13) become:

$$\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^* = \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^* = \left(\sum_{k=1}^K V_k^{-1} \right)^{-1} \sum_{k=1}^K V_k^{-1} \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k, \quad (4.15)$$

$$\text{var}(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^*) = V = \left(\sum_{k=1}^K V_k^{-1} \right)^{-1}. \quad (4.16)$$

The optimal weights lead to the maximum likelihood estimator. To apply the optimal weights in practice is typically not straightforward. A closed form expression for the V_k does not always exist, and even if it did, as in the CS case, it may depend on the unknown parameters. The optimal weights can suggest sensible choices and we describe a couple of these. They will be illustrated in the next section for the CS case.

Scalar weights. While optimal weights may be unwieldy, one could consider scalar weights by requiring the A_k to be diagonal. This implies that each component of $\boldsymbol{\theta}^*$, θ_r^* , say, is a linear combination

$$\tilde{\theta}_r^* = \sum_{k=1}^K a_{k,r} \hat{\theta}_{k,r},$$

where then, formally, $A_k = \text{diag}(a_{k,1}, \dots, a_{k,p})$. The optimization route, followed for unrestricted A_k , can then be followed component-wise as well. Because the class of A_k over which to optimize is restricted, the resulting optimum does not necessarily correspond to the maximum likelihood solution. The rationale for choosing this route is computational convenience, and its advantages vary from problem to problem.

Iterated optimal weights. An iterative scheme can be followed:

1. Estimate $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k$.
2. Compute an initial estimator for $\boldsymbol{\theta}^*$, $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*(0)}$, say, using a simple weighting method, e.g., using constant or proportional weights.
3. Using the current parameter estimate, $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*(t)}$ say, calculate $V_k^{(t+1)}$.
4. Determine:

$$\boldsymbol{\theta}^{*(t+1)} = \left(\sum_{k=1}^K [V_k^{(t+1)}]^{-1} \right)^{-1} \sum_{k=1}^K [V_k^{(t+1)}]^{-1} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k.$$

5. Repeat steps 2–3 until convergence.

This scheme can always be followed and it has the advantage that the data need only be analyzed once, to yield $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k$. From this point on, calculations involve algebraic expressions for the parameters only.

Approximate optimal weighting. Related to the previous method, a non-iterative approximation consists of replacing V_k by $V_k(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k)$ in (4.15). Here, $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k$ could be, for example, the sub-sample specific estimator $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k$, or the $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^*$ obtained using a simple scheme, such as constant or proportional weighting. This method avoids all further iteration, once the $\boldsymbol{\theta}_k$ have been determined.

Approximate optimal weighting is a method that could be considered when the use of (4.13) might lead to underestimation of the variability,

because the A_k now depend on the parameters estimated from stratum k . It is necessary to properly account for this extra source of uncertainty. Consider that

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}_k} (A_k \boldsymbol{\theta}_k) = A_k + \left(\frac{\partial A_k}{\partial \theta_{k1}} \boldsymbol{\theta}_k \Big| \dots \Big| \frac{\partial A_k}{\partial \theta_{kp}} \boldsymbol{\theta}_k \right), \quad (4.17)$$

where θ_{kj} , $j = 1, \dots, p$ ranges over the components of $\boldsymbol{\theta}_k$. Writing $W_k = V_k^{-1}$ for ease of notation,

$$\frac{\partial A_k}{\partial \theta_{kj}} = W^{-1} \frac{\partial W_k}{\partial \theta_{kj}} (I_p - W^{-1} W_k), \quad (4.18)$$

with I_p the p -dimensional identity matrix. Plugging (4.18) into (4.17), the proper delta-method approximation to the variance is

$$\text{var}(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^*) \simeq \sum_{k=1}^K (A_k + B_k) V_k (A_k + B_k)', \quad (4.19)$$

with

$$B_k = (\mathbf{1}'_p \otimes I_p)(I_p \otimes W^{-1}) \text{diag} \left(\frac{\partial W_k}{\partial \theta_{k1}}, \dots, \frac{\partial W_k}{\partial \theta_{kp}} \right) [I_p \otimes (I_p - W^{-1} W_k) \boldsymbol{\theta}],$$

and \otimes signifying Kronecker product.

4.1.6 Partitioned-sample analysis for the compound-symmetry model

For the normal compound-symmetry model, a variety of options exists. We sketch them here, and then consider some in greater detail.

Consider the i.i.d. case, where all clusters are of the same size. Full maximum likelihood then leads to a closed-form solution. Molenberghs et al. (2011) studied splitting the sample in dependent sub-samples for this case, and showed that splitting leads to efficiency loss for the variance components, but not for the mean. They split the sequences of repeated measures in portions of equal size. Unequally sized splits could also be considered, although the rationale for this may not be compelling. They did not consider splits in independent sub-samples. We do so here, in Section 4.1.6, both for sub-samples of equal as well as for unequal size.

With variable cluster size, we know from Section 4.1.4 that full maximum likelihood does not lead to a closed-form solution. We will study in more detail the natural splitting into sub-samples of constant cluster size.

A special case, for both the i.i.d. and unequal cluster-size settings, is the cluster-by-cluster analysis. We will apply our methodology, outlined in Section 4.1.5 to this case, and contrast it with an *ad hoc* moment-based set of estimators.

Variable Cluster Size

Optimal Weights

As we see in Section 4.1.6, scalar and optimal (hence, vectorized) weights do not make a difference for the mean parameter, because of the independence between the mean and the covariance parameters.

We can therefore consider the mean parameter separately from the covariance parameters. Let v_k be the variance of the mean in stratum k , and V_k the corresponding variance-covariance matrix for the variance components. Applying optimal weight (4.14) to the mean produces

$$\tilde{\mu} = \left(\sum_{k=1}^K \frac{c_k n_k}{\widehat{\sigma}_k^2 + n_k \widehat{d}_k} \right)^{-1} \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{c_k n_k \widehat{\mu}_k}{\widehat{\sigma}_k^2 + n_k \widehat{d}_k}. \quad (4.20)$$

The corresponding estimators for the variance components, specific to a cluster size, are given by (4.6) and (4.7). Using them, and expression (4.9) for the variance, it follows that the optimal weighted estimator satisfies

$$\begin{pmatrix} \widetilde{\sigma^2} \\ \widetilde{d} \end{pmatrix} = \left(\sum_{k=1}^K V_k^{-1} \right)^{-1} \sum_{k=1}^K \begin{pmatrix} \frac{Q_k}{2\widehat{\sigma}_k^2} - \frac{d_k(2\widehat{\sigma}_k^2 + n_k \widehat{d}_k)}{2\widehat{\sigma}_k^4(\widehat{\sigma}_k^2 + n_k \widehat{d}_k)^2} R_k \\ \frac{R_k}{2(\widehat{\sigma}_k^2 + n_k \widehat{d}_k)^2} \end{pmatrix}, \quad (4.21)$$

with Q_k and R_k as in (S.9) and (S.10), respectively.

Iterated and Approximate Optimal Weights

Evidently, the principles of iterated and approximate optimal weights can be applied here.

Replacing the variance components in (4.20) by their expectation leads to:

$$\tilde{\mu} = \left(\sum_{k=1}^K \frac{c_k n_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d} \right)^{-1} \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{c_k n_k \widehat{\mu}_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d}. \quad (4.22)$$

If we do the same for the mean, on both sides of the equality, we obtain

$$\mu = \left(\sum_{k=1}^K \frac{c_k n_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d} \right)^{-1} \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{c_k n_k \mu}{\sigma^2 + n_k d}. \quad (4.23)$$

Although (4.20) cannot directly be used, because of circularity, (4.22) and (4.23) are available to us.

Replacing the variance components on the right hand side of (4.21) by their expectations leads to

$$\begin{pmatrix} \widetilde{\sigma^2} \\ \widetilde{d} \end{pmatrix} = \left(\sum_{k=1}^K V_k^{-1} \right)^{-1} \sum_{k=1}^K \begin{pmatrix} \frac{Q_k}{2\sigma^2} - \frac{d(2\sigma^2 + n_k d)}{2\sigma^4(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^2} R_k \\ \frac{R_k}{2(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^2} \end{pmatrix}. \quad (4.24)$$

Using their explicit expressions, and using the fact that the expectation must be $(\sigma^2, d)'$, (4.21) leads to the following identity:

$$\begin{pmatrix} \sigma^2 \\ d \end{pmatrix} = V \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{c_k n_k}{2(\sigma^2 + n_k d)} \begin{pmatrix} \frac{\sigma^2 + (n_k - 1)d}{\sigma^2} \\ 1 \end{pmatrix}. \quad (4.25)$$

Expressions (4.20) and (4.21) can be used for approximate weighting, by plugging in, as is done, on the right hand side, the cluster-size specific mean and variance components.

Expressions (4.22) and (4.24) can be used for iterated weighting. The estimator for the mean depends on the variance components, but not vice versa. This dependence is insightful: there is independence between mean and variance components for every cluster-size specific stratum

separately. As a consequence, $\tilde{\mu}$ on the one hand, and $\tilde{\sigma}^2$ and \tilde{d} on the other, can be determined separately, provided the latter are done first.

Expressions (4.23) and (4.25) move beyond the previous schemes and exist by virtue of their explicit expressions. In (4.25) an initial consistent estimator for the variance components can be used on the right hand side. Once the left hand side has been determined, the result can be plugged in again on the right, until convergence. Once done, the final variance component estimates can be used in (4.23) and the process repeated for μ , until convergence.

Scalar Weights

In this case, A_k equals $\text{diag}(a_k, b_k, g_k)$, with the scalars as in (4.11). Obviously, the conditions for unbiased estimators are $\sum_{k=1}^K a_k = \sum_{k=1}^K b_k = \sum_{k=1}^K g_k = 1$.

The stratum-specific estimators are given by (4.5)–(4.7) and their variance-covariance structure by (4.8)–(4.9). The objective function to find the optimum is

$$Q = \sum_{k=1}^K a_k^2 \text{var}(\widehat{\mu}_k) - \lambda \left(\sum_{k=1}^K a_k \right).$$

Logic, similar to the vector case, and using the explicit expressions for

the variances, leads to:

$$a_k = \frac{\frac{c_k n_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d}}{\sum_{m=1}^K \frac{c_m n_m}{\sigma^2 + n_m d}} = \frac{\frac{c_k n_k}{(1-\rho) + n_k \rho}}{\sum_{m=1}^K \frac{c_m n_m}{(1-\rho) + n_m \rho}}, \quad (4.26)$$

$$b_k = \frac{c_k(n_k - 1)}{\sum_{m=1}^K c_m(n_m - 1)}, \quad (4.27)$$

$$g_k = \frac{\frac{c_k n_k}{\frac{\sigma^4}{n_k - 1} + 2\sigma^2 d + n_k d^2}}{\sum_{m=1}^K \frac{c_m n_m}{\frac{\sigma^4}{n_m - 1} + 2\sigma^2 d + n_m d^2}} \quad (4.28)$$

$$= \frac{\frac{c_k n_k (n_k - 1)}{(1-\rho)^2 + [2\rho(1-\rho) + n_k \rho^2](n_k - 1)}}{\sum_{m=1}^K \frac{c_m n_m (n_m - 1)}{(1-\rho)^2 + [2\rho(1-\rho) + n_m \rho^2](n_m - 1)}}, \quad (4.29)$$

where $\rho = d/(\sigma^2 + d)$. Here, the coefficients depend on the parameters in different ways. While b_k is independent of the parameters, a_k has denominators linear in σ^2 and d (equivalently, in ρ), and g_k has quadratic functions instead.

These weights, like the optimal ones, depend on the parameters. Evidently, they can be made part of an iterative scheme, as with the vector-valued weights. The added advantages are that matrix computations simplify to scalar computations; for models with relatively few parameters, like the one here, this is a small advantage. More importantly, approximations can be considered for each parameter separately.

Direct calculations show that the variance for the weighted estimator of the mean, using weights (4.26), is equal to that of maximum likelihood. For this parameter, the weighted split-sample estimator is the maximum

likelihood estimator, in spite of the use of the scalar weight. This is to be expected, because V_k is block-diagonal and because of independence of the mean estimator from the variance components estimators within a given cluster size. This implies that the optimally weighted estimator and the scalar estimator coincide for the mean. They differ for the variance components.

Approximate Optimal Scalar Weights

To illustrate the logic of this method, consider (4.26)–(4.28) for the case where cluster sizes, for a good majority of the clusters, are sufficiently large. Taking limits for $n_k \rightarrow +\infty$ produces

$$a_k^{\text{app}} = g_k^{\text{app}} = c_k/N. \quad (4.30)$$

When this approximation is sensible, the very simple proportional weights follow. These approximations are exact, for a_k and g_k , when $\rho = 1$. They deteriorate when ρ becomes smaller. For example, in case $\rho = 0$,

$$a_k(\rho = 0) = \frac{c_k n_k}{\sum_{m=1}^K c_m n_m},$$

$$g_k(\rho = 0) = \frac{c_k n_k (c_k n_k - 1)}{\sum_{m=1}^K c_m n_m (c_m n_m - 1)} \approx \frac{c_k^2 n_k^2}{\sum_{m=1}^K c_m^2 n_m^2}.$$

A reasonable approximation for b_k is

$$b_k^{\text{app}} = \frac{c_k n_k}{\sum_{m=1}^K c_m n_m}, \quad (4.31)$$

which sets it equal to $a_k(\rho = 0)$. The information for σ^2 is thus determined more in terms of the number of measurements than in the number of clusters. Dropping the n_k from this formula is sensible only when cluster sizes are not too different from one another.

Figure 4.1 depicts optimal scalar weights (4.26)–(4.28), alongside the apparently simplistic proportional weights, for two of the five NTP datasets chosen to represent two relatively different empirical cluster size distributions. In both cases, there is a considerable range of cluster sizes, approximately 1 to 20. At the same time, the frequencies of the cluster sizes vary considerably. The values for a_k and g_k are almost identical to the proportional weights. While a small discrepancy for b_k is noticeable, and understandable in view of (4.31), the proportional weights seem to offer a sensible choice. This issue will be examined further in the data-analytic Section 4.1.8.

The Special Case of Common Cluster Size, Splits of (Un)equal Size

When $n_k \equiv n$ is constant, (4.26)–(4.28) reduce to:

$$a_k = b_k = g_k = c_k/N, \quad (4.32)$$

Hence, while $a_k = b_k$ reduce to proportional weights, for g_k there is an impact of the partitioning structure. When, further, c_k is constant, we obtain $a_k = b_k = g_k = c/N = 1/K$, and equal weights follow. The similarities and the subtle differences with the results from Section 4.1.6

are worth pointing out. Expressions (4.30) and (4.32) are identical except for the parameter σ^2 .

Cluster-by-cluster Analysis

The expressions presented earlier in this section, using optimal weights and variations on this theme, can be applied when the partitioning is as extreme as possible: a single cluster per stratum. This sets $c_k \equiv 1$. Evidently, the n_k will then no longer be unique, but that is immaterial; while we make use of the fact that the cluster size is constant within a stratum, it does not need to be different between strata. We examine this case in more detail in Supplementary Materials Section A.5.1. In particular, we derive under what asymptotics such an estimator is consistent.

4.1.7 Simulation study

A first, limited, simulation study was carried out to examine the behavior of the partitioning method. Details are given in Supplementary Materials Section A.6. Three settings were considered: (1) $c_k \cdot n_k$ is kept constant with the factors taking different values; (2) c_k is kept constant; (3) n_k is kept constant. For all of these, k goes from 1 to 4, so that there are four sub-samples. Apart from full likelihood, a series of weights was considered: equal, proportional to c_k , size proportional to $c_k \cdot n_k$, approximate optimal, and iterated optimal.

From the results it is clear that equal weights are not a good choice. For

μ and d , proportional weights are excellent, while for σ^2 so are the size proportional weights. Iterated optimal weights perform considerably better than approximate optimal weights, in the sense that the latter, like equal weights, arguably should not be considered for practice. When comparing iterated and approximate optimal weights, the former are more computationally intensive.

However, iterated optimal weights give results very close to proportional weights (for μ and d) and to size proportional weights (for σ^2). Importantly, all of these results are very close to the ones obtained from maximum likelihood.

As a consequence, we have a simple, non-iterative set of weights at our disposal, free of unknown parameters, with excellent performance.

A second simulation study compares the proposed methods to two alternatives: full maximum likelihood and multiple imputation. Details are reported in Supplementary Materials Section A.7. The most striking conclusion is that closed-form solutions are much faster than their alternatives while, at the same time, yielding most precise results. The time gain of our fastest method relative to standard maximum likelihood using PROC MIXED ranges from 5 times to 30,000 times faster.

4.1.8 Analysis of case study

The data, introduced in Section 4.1.2, were analyzed in three ways. In Section 4.1.8 maximum likelihood estimators are presented, with split

sampling, where splitting is by cluster size and using various weighting schemes. In Section 4.1.8, a dose effect is added to these. Finally, the cluster-by-cluster methodology of Section 4.1.6 is illustrated in Section 4.1.8.

Splitting by Cluster Size, No Dose Effect

Tables 4.2–4.4 present (restricted) maximum likelihood estimates (standard errors), together with those from various weighted estimators. The standard CS model is fitted to the fetal weight outcome, ignoring the dose effect. Because there is an effect of dose on litter size, the mean is associated with cluster size. It is therefore interesting to assess the impact of this on the split-sample estimators, when compared to the MLEs.

The ML and REML are very similar, with equal point estimates for μ , nearly equal estimates for σ^2 , and similar estimates for d . The equality for the mean estimator is known for the CS case. The difference in the estimates of σ^2 arises because the denominator used in its calculation is, for ML, the total number of fetuses and, for REML, the same figure less one. For d , the difference is in terms of the cluster sizes (division by n_i or $n_i - 1$), which is more noticeable. All weighted estimators, except with equal weights, lead to very similar point estimates; this is in line with the simulation results. Even for equal weights, the difference is not worrisome. Proportional, equal, and approximate scalar weights are parameter-free and depend at most on the cluster size and/or the

Table 4.2: NTP Data (DEHP). Cluster-by-cluster analysis. Maximum likelihood and weighted split-sample estimates (standard errors): (a) ML: maximum likelihood; (b) REML: restricted maximum likelihood; (c) Prop.: proportional weights; (d) Equal: equal weights; (e) Approx. sc.: like proportional weights, except that for b_k (4.31) is used; (f) Scalar: scalar weights, with the sub-sample specific weights plugged in for the parameters figuring in the weights; (g) Opt.: optimal weights, with the sub-sample specific weights plugged in for the parameters figuring in the weights. Proper: proper variances for optimal weights

Par.	ML	REML	Prop.	Equal	Approx. sc.	Scalar	Optimal	
							Simpl.	Proper
Weighted [(A.5.14)(A.5.16)(A.5.18)]								
μ	0.90718	0.90716	0.90602	0.89558	0.90602	0.92080	0.92080	
σ^2	0.01877	0.01877	0.02122	0.02244	0.01895	0.01871	0.01246	
d	0.01181	0.01195	0.00951	0.01016	0.00951	0.00085	0.00087	
s.e.($\hat{\mu}$)	0.01149	0.01155	0.01076	0.01360	0.01076	0.00766	0.00766	0.00766
s.e.($\hat{\sigma}^2$)	0.00084	0.00084	0.00128	0.00199	0.00094	0.00092	0.00061	0.00138
s.e.(\hat{d})	0.00196	0.00199	0.00210	0.00293	0.00210	0.00048	0.00045	0.00340
Two-stage [(A.5.14)(A.5.21)(A.5.22)]								
μ	0.90718	0.90716	0.90602	0.89558	0.90602	0.92119	0.92119	
σ^2	0.01877	0.01877	0.01868	0.01931	0.01696	0.01679	0.01155	
d	0.01181	0.01195	0.01204	0.01329	0.01204	0.00362	0.00376	
s.e.($\hat{\mu}$)	0.01149	0.01155	0.01169	0.01496	0.01169	0.00901	0.00901	0.00901
s.e.($\hat{\sigma}^2$)	0.00084	0.00084	0.00092	0.00127	0.00074	0.00072	0.00057	0.02404
s.e.(\hat{d})	0.00196	0.00199	0.03045	0.02915	0.03045	0.02537	0.00087	0.27337
Unbiased two-stage [(A.5.14)(A.5.25)(A.5.26)]								
μ	0.90718	0.90716	0.90602	0.89558	0.90602	0.92195	0.92195	
σ^2	0.01877	0.01877	0.02122	0.02244	0.01895	0.01871	0.01244	
d	0.01181	0.01195	0.01390	0.01609	0.01390	0.00448	0.00467	
s.e.($\hat{\mu}$)	0.01149	0.01155	0.01257	0.01679	0.01257	0.00958	0.00958	0.00958
s.e.($\hat{\sigma}^2$)	0.00084	0.00084	0.00128	0.00199	0.00094	0.00092	0.00061	0.00172
s.e.(\hat{d})	0.00196	0.00199	0.00291	0.00447	0.00291	0.00101	0.00102	0.00634

number of clusters per size. This explains why these estimators yield standard errors similar to the likelihood-based ones. Not surprisingly, because of their deviation from optimality, equal weights lead to increased uncertainty.

Table 4.3: NTP Data (EG). Cluster-by-cluster analysis. Maximum likelihood and weighted split-sample estimates (standard errors): (a) ML: maximum likelihood; (b) REML: restricted maximum likelihood; (c) Prop.: proportional weights; (d) Equal: equal weights; (e) Approx. sc.: like proportional weights, except that for b_k (4.31) is used; (f) Scalar: scalar weights, with the sub-sample specific weights plugged in for the parameters figuring in the weights; (g) Opt.: optimal weights, with the sub-sample specific weights plugged in for the parameters figuring in the weights. Proper: proper variances for optimal weights

Par.	ML	REML	Prop.	Equal	Approx. sc.	Scalar	Optimal	
							Simpl.	Proper
Weighted [(A.5.14)(A.5.16)(A.5.18)]								
μ	0.82952	0.82952	0.83342	0.84653	0.83342	0.84133	0.84133	
σ^2	0.00886	0.00886	0.00885	0.00899	0.00879	0.00878	0.00608	
d	0.01704	0.01724	0.01606	0.01536	0.01606	0.01381	0.01408	
s.e.($\hat{\mu}$)	0.01402	0.01410	0.01393	0.01485	0.01393	0.01346	0.01346	0.01346
s.e.($\hat{\sigma}^2$)	0.00041	0.00041	0.00046	0.00051	0.00044	0.00044	0.00031	0.00328
s.e.(\hat{d})	0.00265	0.00269	0.00264	0.00272	0.00264	0.00230	0.00230	0.00476
Two-stage [(A.5.14)(A.5.21)(A.5.22)]								
μ	0.82952	0.82952	0.83342	0.84653	0.83342	0.84100	0.84100	
σ^2	0.00886	0.00886	0.00803	0.00814	0.00802	0.00802	0.00559	
d	0.01704	0.01724	0.01688	0.01621	0.01688	0.01476	0.01499	
s.e.($\hat{\mu}$)	0.01402	0.01410	0.01423	0.01522	0.01423	0.01379	0.01379	0.01379
s.e.($\hat{\sigma}^2$)	0.00041	0.00041	0.00037	0.00041	0.00037	0.00037	0.00029	0.03410
s.e.(\hat{d})	0.00265	0.00269	0.02814	0.02555	0.02814	0.02632	0.00243	0.05214
Unbiased two-stage [(A.5.14)(A.5.25)(A.5.26)]								
μ	0.82952	0.82952	0.83342	0.84653	0.83342	0.83911	0.83911	
σ^2	0.00886	0.00886	0.00885	0.00899	0.00879	0.00878	0.00608	
d	0.01704	0.01724	0.01857	0.01833	0.01857	0.01657	0.01684	
s.e.($\hat{\mu}$)	0.01402	0.01410	0.01493	0.01665	0.01493	0.01452	0.01452	0.01452
s.e.($\hat{\sigma}^2$)	0.00041	0.00041	0.00046	0.00051	0.00044	0.00044	0.00031	0.00363
s.e.(\hat{d})	0.00265	0.00269	0.00302	0.00333	0.00302	0.00271	0.00271	0.00533

For the scalar and optimal estimators two issues need to be borne in mind. First, in principle they require knowledge of the true parameters. In the absence of them, plug-in estimates were used. Because of the independence between mean and variance parameters, both methods

Table 4.4: NTP Data (DYME). Cluster-by-cluster analysis. Maximum likelihood and weighted split-sample estimates (standard errors): (a) ML: maximum likelihood; (b) REML: restricted maximum likelihood; (c) Prop.: proportional weights; (d) Equal: equal weights; (e) Approx. sc.: like proportional weights, except that for b_k (4.31) is used; (f) Scalar: scalar weights, with the sub-sample specific weights plugged in for the parameters figuring in the weights; (g) Opt.: optimal weights, with the sub-sample specific weights plugged in for the parameters figuring in the weights. Proper: proper variances for optimal weights

Par.	ML	REML	Prop.	Equal	Approx. sc.	Scalar	Optimal	
							Simpl.	Proper
Weighted [(A.5.14)(A.5.16)(A.5.18)]								
μ	0.84142	0.84141	0.84108	0.84861	0.84108	0.90166	0.90166	
σ^2	0.01031	0.01031	0.01072	0.01071	0.01034	0.01031	0.00700	
d	0.03657	0.03695	0.03102	0.03445	0.03102	0.00745	0.00755	
s.e.($\hat{\mu}$)	0.01926	0.01936	0.01780	0.02502	0.01780	0.01257	0.01257	0.01257
s.e.($\hat{\sigma^2}$)	0.00044	0.00044	0.00052	0.00079	0.00047	0.00046	0.00033	0.00308
s.e.(\hat{d})	0.00529	0.00537	0.00570	0.01043	0.00570	0.00159	0.00159	0.00329
Two-stage [(A.5.14)(A.5.21)(A.5.22)]								
μ	0.84142	0.84141	0.84108	0.84861	0.84108	0.90009	0.90009	
σ^2	0.01031	0.01031	0.00975	0.00964	0.00945	0.00942	0.00650	
d	0.03657	0.03695	0.03199	0.03552	0.03199	0.00836	0.00845	
s.e.($\hat{\mu}$)	0.01926	0.01936	0.01804	0.02535	0.01804	0.01297	0.01297	0.01297
s.e.($\hat{\sigma^2}$)	0.00044	0.00044	0.00042	0.00059	0.00039	0.00039	0.00030	0.02568
s.e.(\hat{d})	0.00529	0.00537	0.03433	0.03113	0.03433	0.02215	0.00173	0.04036
Unbiased two-stage [(A.5.14)(A.5.25)(A.5.26)]								
μ	0.84142	0.84141	0.84108	0.84861	0.84108	0.89672	0.89672	
σ^2	0.01031	0.01031	0.01072	0.01071	0.01034	0.01031	0.00700	
d	0.03657	0.03695	0.03690	0.04514	0.03690	0.01027	0.01037	
s.e.($\hat{\mu}$)	0.01926	0.01936	0.01937	0.02989	0.01937	0.01390	0.01390	0.01390
s.e.($\hat{\sigma^2}$)	0.00044	0.00044	0.00052	0.00079	0.00047	0.00046	0.00033	0.00353
s.e.(\hat{d})	0.00529	0.00537	0.00718	0.01542	0.00718	0.00205	0.00205	0.00382

produce the same results for μ . Also, the estimates for μ are similar to the likelihood-based ones. For σ^2 , this scalar-weight method works better than the optimal, matrix-based one. Because of their matrix nature, optimal weights are less stable when approximated. The standard errors

are underestimated because uncertainty, stemming from plugging in the weights is ignored when using the ‘simplified’ precision estimates. When rectified (‘proper’ weights), there is no difference for the mean parameter, because the weights are parameter-free, but there is a strong difference for the variance components. Once the proper standard errors are calculated, it is clear that there is information loss because of using plug-in estimates in the weights, rather than the true ones.

Splitting by Cluster Size, With Dose Effect

While these results illustrate the explicit derivations with a constant mean, the data analysis in Section 4.1.8 does not do full justice to the actual design of the experiment, because the question of scientific interest is the dose-response relationship. Let x_i be the dose administered to cluster i , taking one out of 4 to 5 values. The dose levels for the DEHP study are given in Table 4.1. The model then is $\mathbf{Y}_i \sim N(\{\beta_0 + \beta_1 x_i\} \mathbf{1}_n, \sigma^2 I_n + dJ_n)$. Because the mean and covariance parameters are functionally and statistically independent within a sub-sample of constant cluster size, the considerations presented for the constant-mean case will remain valid. The results of fitting this extended model to the DEHP, EG, and DYME compounds, under ML (and REML) on the one hand, and using split-sample methodology (with proportional, equal, and approximate scalar weights) on the other, are presented in Table 4.5. The results are comforting, showing that proportional and approximate scalar weights are a sensible choice. This is consistent with theoretical considerations, the simulations results, and

the analysis in Section 4.1.8.

Cluster-by-cluster Methods

We illustrate the cluster-by-cluster methods here. Results are presented in Tables 4.2–4.4, for DEHP, EG, and DYME, respectively. For brevity, attention here is confined to the case of no dose effect.

We consider three alternatives. In all three, (A.5.14) is used for the mean. For the variance components, the pairs (A.5.16)-(A.5.18), (A.5.21)-(A.5.22), and (A.5.25)-(A.5.26) are used, respectively. Because these expressions are derived for a given cluster size, we need to supplement them with a weighting method. For comparison, the same choices are made as reported in Tables 4.2–4.4.

Even though the same estimator *per cluster size* is used for the mean in all three cases, the overall result is different for scalar and optimal weights because these depend on the estimated variance components. A relatively clear message is that proportional and approximate scalar weights show very good performance. This is pleasing, because these weights are parameter-free and hence easy to apply. As to which of the three versions is better is less clear, this differs somewhat from compound to compound and from parameter to parameter. All three show acceptable behavior. It is interesting to see that in some cases the cluster-by-cluster analysis is closer to ML than the analyses based on splitting per cluster size. Computationally, this approach allows for additional parallel processing, with all clusters analyzed in parallel and

the results then combined.

4.1.9 Ramifications and concluding remarks

We considered the simple but insightful case of clustered data with a normal compound-symmetry structure and clusters of varying size. Here, there is no closed-form maximum likelihood estimator and maximization must proceed iteratively. Moreover, there is no uniform optimal unbiased estimator and the MLE is only locally optimal.

When considering the collection of estimators obtained from analyzing the data for each cluster size separately, the MLE for the entire dataset is a vector linear combination of them, with the weights depending on the parameters. Based on theoretical results and simulations, as well as on data analysis, we found that equal weights and so-called approximately optimal weights do not perform well. Iterated optimal and proportional weights show excellent performance, and they are simple and parameter-free. One refinement is that for the mean parameter and for the covariance term d weights should be chosen proportional to the number of clusters of a particular size, c_k , while for the measurement error variance σ^2 proportionality is to the product of the number of clusters of a given size and the cluster size, $c_k \cdot n_k$.

While most of our development is based on the simple, three-parameter compound-symmetry model, in the data analysis we considered a slightly expanded setting, in which the mean takes the form of a regression function. This suggests the use of our results in more elaborate settings,

as long as some form of exchangeability prevails. One such setting is the meta-analytic evaluation of surrogate endpoints (Burzykowski et al., 2006), where two correlated endpoints rather than a single one are considered for each cluster (trial in this case). Admittedly, there may come a point where distinguishing between parameters where it is difficult to determine whether proportional weights or size proportional weights are to be preferred. Based on our simulation results, it may then be sensible to consider proportional weights for all parameters. In the case where clusters take the form of trials, the number of trials may be relatively small, and likely trial sizes are (almost) unique. Our split-sample method then implies that each trial is first analyzed separately, with overall estimates taking the form of linear combinations of trial-specific ones. To provide a formal basis for this, we considered the important special case of a cluster-by-cluster analysis. Such a method is consistent when the number of replicates per cluster (e.g., the number of patients per trial) increases more rapidly than the number of trials. Such an assumption is not realistic in the developmental toxicology setting considered in this paper, but may be sensible in a meta-analysis of clinical trials.

When clusters are very large, it may be attractive to further sub-divide them in sub-clusters. Such a splitting method was also considered by Molenberghs et al. (2011). Its use in our context would require further investigation.

In the NTP data, the observed cluster size is related to the dose applied.

This suggests that it is useful to consider, at the same time, the impact of dose on the outcomes (e.g., fetal weight) as well as on cluster size. This brings us back to the informative cluster sizes mentioned in the Introduction. While work has been done in this area, it is of interest to combine the ideas developed in this paper with a model for cluster size.

4.2 Fast, closed-form, and efficient estimators for hierarchical models with AR (1) covariance and unequal cluster sizes

4.2.1 Introduction

It is common for the number of study units in a design, the sample size, to be fixed *a priori*. However, there are many exceptions to this. Molenberghs et al. (2014) provides an overview of such designs. Some examples are sequential trials, for which the sample size is determined by a stopping rule, missing data, and censored time-to-event data. The focus of this paper is hierarchical data where independent replicates take the form of compound units, generically termed *clusters*. Clustering can occur in many settings, for example, longitudinal data, toxicology (Aerts et al., 2002), cluster randomized trials and, more generally, multi-level designs. The sizes of the resulting clusters can be fixed by design, or may be random. Random sample sizes can be due to missingness in the data, governed by a stochastic mechanism. And, in some cases, the cluster sizes may be associated with the outcomes, often termed ‘informative cluster sizes’, see for example Williamson et al. (2003); Benhin et al. (2005); Hoffman et al. (2001); Cong et al. (2007); Chiang and Lee (2008); Wang et al. (2011); Aerts et al. (2011). However, our interest here is not on informative cluster sizes, but rather unequal cluster sizes that are themselves independent of observed and unobserved outcomes. We concentrate solely on the non-constant nature of the cluster sizes, for

which joint modelling of outcomes and cluster size is not required.

Hermans et al. (2018c) considered the setting of normally distributed clustered data with a compound-symmetry (CS) structure for the dependency, that is, a three-parameter multivariate normal model with a common mean μ , a common variance $\sigma^2 + d$, and a common covariance d . Hermans et al. (2018a) showed that, unless the clusters are of the same size, the sufficient statistics are incomplete and the maximum likelihood estimators (MLEs) do not have closed-form solutions. By contrast, if the clusters are all the same size, and hence also within a subset of clusters of the same size, a closed form solution does exist for the MLEs: sufficient statistics are complete and the estimators are minimum variance unbiased. Molenberghs et al. (2011) studied the CS case and proposed a pseudo-likelihood split-sample approach, as follows. The original sample is divided into subsamples. Maximum likelihood estimation is separately applied to each subsample and the resulting subsample-specific estimators are averaged using appropriate weights. Appropriate measures of precision for the combined estimators are then obtained. In the current setting it is natural, with this approach, to define the subsamples according to the cluster size (Hermans et al., 2018c). When the number of clusters and/or the cluster sizes are very large, standard iterative MLE computation times can become prohibitive. By contrast, the non-iterative nature of the split sample approach can lead to much lower computation times. For the CS setting, Hermans et al. (2018c) show that weights proportional to the cluster sizes perform very well for combining the individual estimators.

Although the CS covariance structure is a natural model for settings that exhibit within-cluster symmetry, other settings, such as longitudinal designs, need to be handled. For these we might consider the first-order autoregressive, AR(1), structure, where it is assumed that the correlation between two measurements changes exponentially over time, that is, $\sigma_{ij} = \sigma^2 \rho^{|i-j|}$. This implies that the variance of the measurements is a constant σ^2 and the covariance decreases with increasing time lag. In this paper, we apply the split-sample method to the normal AR(1)-model, which has three parameters, a common mean μ , a common variance σ^2 , and correlation parameter ρ . An important question will be the appropriate choice of weights in such a setting.

As a motivating example, we consider five clinical trials in schizophrenia. These data were collected from five double-blind randomized clinical trials to compare the effects of two treatments for chronic schizophrenia: risperidone and conventional antipsychotic agents. Subjects who received doses of risperidone (4–6 mg/day) or an active control (haloperidol, perphenazine, zuclopentixol) have been included in the analysis.

Patients were clustered within country, and longitudinal measurements were made on each subject over time. The number of patients ranges from 9 to 128 per country with a total of 2039. The positive and negative syndrome scale (PANSS) was used to assess the global condition of a patient. This scale is constructed from 30 items, each taking values between 1 and 7, giving an overall range of 30 to 210. PANSS provides an operationalized, drug-sensitive instrument, which is useful for both

typological and dimensional assessment of schizophrenia. Depending on the trial, treatment was administered for a duration of 48 weeks with at most 12 monthly measurements. Because not all subjects received treatment at the same time points and, not the same amount, the final dataset is unbalanced.

This dataset was also analyzed from a surrogate markers point perspective in Alonso et al. (2004). The focus here is on the treatment effect, accommodating the longitudinal nature of the response.

The rest of paper is organised as follows. In Section 4.2.2 the model formulation is given. In Section 4.2.3 the estimators for a single constant cluster size are presented. The (in)completeness property is outlined in Section 4.2.4, and in Section 4.2.5 various weighting schemes for clusters of unequal size are explored. In Section 4.2.6, a simulation study is described for the investigation of the performance of the suggested weights and the data are analysed in Section 4.2.7. The closing discussion is presented in Section 4.2.8. Some additional background material is available in a separate, web-based appendix¹.

4.2.2 Model formulation

Suppose that there is a sample of N independent clusters, among which K different cluster sizes n_k ($k = 1, \dots, K$) can be distinguished. Let the multiplicity of cluster size n_k be c_k . The total number of clusters is then $N = \sum_{k=1}^K c_k$. Denote the outcome vector for the i th ($i = 1, \dots, c_k$)

¹ Available at <https://ibiostat.be/online-resources>.

replicate among the clusters of size n_k by $\mathbf{Y}_i^{(k)}$.

All models considered in this paper will be versions of the following general linear mixed model:

$$\mathbf{Y}_i^{(k)} | \mathbf{b}_i^{(k)} \sim N(X_i^{(k)}\beta + Z_i^{(k)}\mathbf{b}_i^{(k)}, \Sigma_i^{(k)}), \quad (4.33)$$

$$\mathbf{b}_i^{(k)} \sim N(0, D), \quad (4.34)$$

where β is a vector of fixed effects, and $X_i^{(k)}$ and $Z_i^{(k)}$ are design matrices. In what follows, we consider an AR(1) covariance structure, in which case the term $Z_i^{(k)}\mathbf{b}_i^{(k)}$ drops from (4.33), while $\Sigma_i^{(k)} = \sigma^2 C_{n_k}$, with entry (r, s) equal to $\rho^{|r-s|}$. For ease of exposition, the mean structure will often be taken to be $\mu \mathbf{1}_{n_k}$, with $\mathbf{1}_{n_k}$ an n_k column vector of ones.

Note that this is very different from the a so-called balanced conditionally independent model. The contrast between this setting and the AR(1) model holds some useful insight. The interested reader can find details about this in the separate Appendix A.8.

4.2.3 Estimators

We begin by assuming that there is only one cluster size occurring, that is, $n_k \equiv n$ and the index k will be dropped from notation throughout this section. The resulting expressions are required for our eventual goal, clusters with variable size, which we reach in Section 4.2.5.

Again, for the present, we confine attention to clusters of constant size

n . (For the purpose of identifiability we assume that there are clusters of size at least two.) Consequently, all dimension-indication subscripts n_k on matrices and vectors can be dropped until we reach Section 4.2.5. The AR(1) model of Section 4.2.2 can then be written as:

$$\mathbf{Y}_i \sim N\left(X_i\boldsymbol{\beta}, \Sigma = \sigma^2 C\right).$$

Because $C \equiv C(\rho)$, the parameter vector is $\boldsymbol{\theta} = (\boldsymbol{\beta}', \rho, \sigma^2)$. When the mean is constant $\mu_i = X_i\boldsymbol{\beta} = \mu\mathbf{1}$. It is often stated that the MLE for the AR(1) model, with a constant or more elaborate mean structure, requires numerical iteration. This is certainly the case when not all clusters are of the same size. However, in the constant cluster size case considered here, there is a closed-form solution. Our development follows, in part, Kenward (1981).

For c clusters of length n , the kernel of the log-likelihood takes the form:

$$\ell \propto -\frac{c}{2} \ln |\Sigma| - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^c (\mathbf{y}_i - \mu_i)' \Sigma^{-1} (\mathbf{y}_i - \mu_i). \quad (4.35)$$

The score equation for the mean produces, as usual:

$$\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}} = \frac{1}{c} \sum_{i=1}^c (X_i' \Sigma^{-1} X_i)^{-1} (X_i' \Sigma^{-1} \mathbf{Y}_i). \quad (4.36)$$

Consider (4.36) for the case of a constant mean. If Σ corresponds to independence or compound-symmetry, the MLE for μ is the ordinary sample average, it does not depend on covariance parameters. For a

general design β is estimated by the OLS estimator. However, in our AR(1) case, solving the score equations leads to:

$$\hat{\mu} = \frac{1}{c[(n-2)(1-\rho)+2]} \sum_{i=1}^c \left(\sum_{j=1}^n Y_{ij} - \rho \sum_{j=2}^{n-1} Y_{ij} \right). \quad (4.37)$$

Not only does (4.37) depend on ρ (hence the MLE for ρ needs to be plugged in), it differs from the OLS:

$$\tilde{\mu} = \frac{1}{cn} \sum_{i=1}^c \sum_{j=1}^n Y_{ij}. \quad (4.38)$$

It follows easily that, when $\rho = 0$ both estimators are the same, as it should. Interestingly, when $\rho = \pm 1$:

$$\hat{\mu}(\rho = +1) = \frac{1}{c} \sum_{i=1}^c \frac{Y_{i1} + Y_{in}}{2}, \quad (4.39)$$

$$\hat{\mu}(\rho = -1) = \frac{1}{c(n-1)} \sum_{i=1}^c \left(\sum_{j=1}^n Y_{ij} - \frac{Y_{i1} + Y_{in}}{2} \right). \quad (4.40)$$

Turning to the score equations for the variance components, $\partial\ell/\partial\sigma^2$ leads to

$$\sigma^2 = \frac{1}{cn} \sum_{i=1}^c (\mathbf{y}_i - \boldsymbol{\mu}_i)' C^{-1} (\mathbf{y}_i - \boldsymbol{\mu}_i). \quad (4.41)$$

Through C , the right-hand side depends on ρ . For ρ , we find:

$$\sigma^2 \frac{2\rho}{1-\rho^2} = \frac{1}{c(n-1)} \sum_{i=1}^c (\mathbf{y}_i - \boldsymbol{\mu}_i)' F (\mathbf{y}_i - \boldsymbol{\mu}_i), \quad (4.42)$$

with

$$F = \frac{\partial C^{-1}}{\partial \rho} = \frac{1}{(1 - \rho^2)^2} \text{tridiag} \left\{ [2\rho, 4\rho, \dots, 4\rho, 2\rho]'; [-(1 + \rho^2), \dots, -(1 + \rho^2)]' \right\}, \quad (4.43)$$

and with $\text{tridiag}(\mathbf{v}_1, \mathbf{v}_2)$ a tri-diagonal matrix with \mathbf{v}_1 along the main diagonal and \mathbf{v}_2 on the adjacent diagonals. Both (4.41) and (4.42) contain a summation that can be rewritten as $\text{tr}(S \cdot Q)$, with

$$S = \sum_{i=1}^c (\mathbf{y}_i - \mu_i)(\mathbf{y}_i - \mu_i)'$$

and Q either C^{-1} or F , as in (4.43), respectively. Using this formulation, and some straightforward but tedious algebra, produces:

$$f(\rho) = (n - 1)S_2\rho^3 - (n - 2)R\rho^2 - (nS_2 + S_1)\rho + nR = 0, \quad (4.44)$$

the solution of which is the MLE $\hat{\rho}$. Here,

$$S_1 = \sum_{j=1}^n s_{jj}, \quad S_2 = \sum_{j=2}^{n-1} s_{jj}, \quad R = \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} s_{j,j+1}. \quad (4.45)$$

These can be plugged into (4.37) to obtain $\hat{\mu}$ and into:

$$\hat{\sigma}^2 = \frac{1}{c} \cdot \frac{1}{1 - \hat{\rho}^2} (S_1 + \hat{\rho}^2 S_2 - 2\hat{\rho}R), \quad (4.46)$$

to obtain the MLE for σ^2 .

It is easy to see that $f(\rho)$ has a single root in $[-1, 1]$. Indeed, $f(-\infty) = -\infty$, $f(+\infty) = +\infty$, $f(-1) > 0$, and $f(1) < 0$. The other two real roots are therefore in $] -\infty, -1]$ and $[1, +\infty [$. The general solution of a third-degree polynomial follows from Cardano's method. The polynomial under study was examined by Kenward (1981) who, using results of Koopmans (1942), derived an expression for the solution inside $[-1, 1]$. Alternatively, the method of Shelbey (1975) can be used. It takes the following form. Write the polynomial symbolically as $f(\rho) = a\rho^3 + b\rho^2 + c\rho + d$, define

$$p = \frac{3ac - b^2}{3a^2}, \quad q = \frac{2b^3 - 9abc + 27a^2d}{27a^3},$$

and further

$$C(p, q) = 2\sqrt{-\frac{p}{3}} \cos \left[\frac{1}{3} \arccos \left(\frac{3q}{2p} \sqrt{-\frac{3}{p}} \right) \right].$$

For three real roots $t_0 \leq t_1 \leq t_2$, it follows that $t_0 = C(p, q)$, $t_2 = -C(p, -q)$, and $t_1 = -t_0 - t_2$. Finally, $\hat{\rho} = t_1 - b/(3a)$. While not as simple as the other explicit expressions for estimators, the key point is that it has a closed-form which, in turn, can be used to obtain a closed form solution for the mean and the variance, using (4.37) and (4.46), respectively. Given that it is unambiguously clear which of the three cubic solutions is the right one, no comparisons are needed, which enhances computational efficiency.

We now turn to the second derivatives in view of precision estimation.

Denote by \mathcal{I} the information matrix. In the usual fashion: $\mathcal{I}_{\beta\beta} = \sum_{i=1}^c X_i' \Sigma^{-1} X_i$. For a simple common mean μ , this becomes: $\mathcal{I}_{\mu\mu} = c [n - (n-2)\rho] / [\sigma^2(1+\rho)]$. Algebraic derivations, sketched in separate Appendix A.9, lead to:

$$\mathcal{I}_{\sigma^2\rho,\sigma^2\rho} = c \begin{pmatrix} \frac{n}{2(\sigma^2)^2} & -\frac{n-1}{\sigma^2} \cdot \frac{\rho}{1-\rho^2} \\ -\frac{n-1}{\sigma^2} \cdot \frac{\rho}{1-\rho^2} & \frac{(n-1)(1+\rho^2)}{(1-\rho^2)^2} \end{pmatrix}. \quad (4.47)$$

It is convenient to slightly change (4.47) to

$$\tilde{\mathcal{I}}_{\sigma^2\rho,\sigma^2\rho} = c \begin{pmatrix} \frac{n-1}{2(\sigma^2)^2} & -\frac{n-1}{\sigma^2} \cdot \frac{\rho}{1-\rho^2} \\ -\frac{n-1}{\sigma^2} \cdot \frac{\rho}{1-\rho^2} & \frac{(n-1)(1+\rho^2)}{(1-\rho^2)^2} \end{pmatrix}, \quad (4.48)$$

yielding a very simple inverse:

$$\tilde{\mathcal{I}}_{\sigma^2\rho,\sigma^2\rho}^{-1} = \frac{1}{c(n-1)} \begin{pmatrix} \frac{2(\sigma^2)^2(1+\rho^2)}{1-\rho^2} & 2\sigma^2\rho \\ 2\sigma^2\rho & 1-\rho^2 \end{pmatrix}. \quad (4.49)$$

4.2.4 Complete and incomplete sufficient statistics

The property of central interest in this section is that of *completeness* (Casella and Berger, 2002, pp. 285–286). It means that any measurable function of a sufficient statistic, that has the zero expectation for every value of the parameter indexing the parametric model class, is the zero function almost everywhere. As has been shown in the sequential trial context, a lack of completeness does not preclude the existence of estimators with desirable properties (Molenberghs et al., 2014).

Liu and Hall (1999) established the incompleteness of the sufficient statistic for a clinical trial with a stopping rule, for the case of normally distributed endpoints. Liu et al. (2006) generalized this result to the exponential family. Molenberghs et al. (2014) and Milanzi et al. (2016) broadened it further to a stochastic rather than a deterministic stopping rule. They showed that, while the maximum likelihood estimator for the mean exhibits some small-sample bias and is not uniformly best, it still is consistent and asymptotically normal, in most settings, and it is a very reasonable choice.

Hermans et al. (2018c) studied in detail the compound-symmetry model, which is essentially our model but with the AR(1) variance-covariance matrix replaced by $\sigma^2 I_{n_k} + dJ_{n_k}$, J_{n_k} being an $n_k \times n_k$ matrix of ones. They showed that, while the CS model yields a complete sufficient statistic when the cluster size is constant, this is no longer the case when at least 2 different cluster sizes occur. Rather than the definition of a complete sufficient statistic, they used a convenient characterization (Milanzi et al., 2015), stating that a sufficient statistic \mathbf{k} is complete for a parameter $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ in a exponential family model if and only if $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ cannot be transformed 1-1 to a parameterization $\boldsymbol{\eta}$ with a proper subset $\boldsymbol{\eta}_1$ such that $\boldsymbol{\eta} = [\boldsymbol{\eta}'_1, \boldsymbol{\eta}'_2(\boldsymbol{\eta}_1)']'$. In the type of settings that we consider, the minimal sufficient statistic is complete if it is of the same dimension as the estimator.

In what follows, we will establish completeness for the balanced conditional independence model, with the reverse holding for AR(1) model.

So, in contrast to the balanced growth curve model and the compound-symmetry model with constant cluster size, an AR(1) model with constant cluster size does not allow complete sufficient statistics. This leads to some surprising results in the AR(1) case, as well as in a number of related settings of a temporal and/or spatial nature. Some of these have been alluded to in the literature of the interbellum and the early post-war period.

Balanced conditionally independent model

This model of which the estimators are spelt out in Section A.8, obviously admits a complete minimal sufficient statistic because the numbers of sufficient statistics (A.8.1)–(A.8.4) and estimators match (A.8.5)–(A.8.8).

AR(1) Model

The mean estimator (4.37) consists of two sufficient statistics:

$$\begin{aligned} K_1 &= \sum_{i=1}^c \sum_{j=1}^n Y_{ij}, \\ K_2 &= \sum_{i=1}^c \sum_{j=2}^{n-1} Y_{ij}, \end{aligned} \tag{4.50}$$

with the sufficient statistics for σ^2 and ρ spelt out in (4.45). In other words, the three-component vector $\boldsymbol{\theta} = (\mu, \sigma^2, \rho)'$ has a minimal sufficient statistic (K_1, K_2, S_1, S_2, R) of dimension 5, establishing incompleteness.

Even though the AR(1) model has not been studied before from the

perspective of incomplete sufficient statistics, its ramifications have been mentioned in the literature. For example, as described by Martin (2006), Papadakis proposed, as early as 1937, a correction to the least-squares estimator for correlated observations arising in such settings as adjoining plots designs (Papadakis, 1937; Bartlett, 1938, 1976, 1978). The topic was also touched upon by Cochran et al. (1948), in the context of discriminant analysis combined with analysis of covariance. Clearly, the opportunity for such an *ad hoc* correction arises from the incompleteness. Martin (2006) and earlier authors discussing Papadakis' method refer to the somewhat unusual dependence of the mean estimator on the variance components. This parallels the property of the MLE for the mean in the AR(1) case, as in (4.37). Indeed, because ρ is estimated from solving a third-degree polynomial with coefficients that are functions of the sums of squares and cross-products matrix, it too is a function of such deviations. Of course, the ρ in our case is more complex than Papadakis' correction, which was more of an *ad hoc* nature, while our estimator is the solution to the likelihood equations. In essence, Papadakis' method builds a covariate from deviations observed from adjacent plots. Especially when the plots are arranged as a linear array, the connection with AR(1) is strong. Both non-iterative and iterative versions were proposed by Papadakis. In the iterative case, the covariate is re-built after every iteration, using the current value of the parameters. In more general settings, the data have a spatial layout.

In all of these cases, dependency on adjacent observations gives rise to tri-diagonal matrices, like C^{-1} in the AR(1) setting.

Cochran et al. (1948, p. 172) noted that the relative efficiency of the estimators with or without the use of covariance is not uniformly larger or smaller than one, but that for sufficiently large sample sizes the difference between them is small. This is entirely consistent with our findings for the AR(1) case. For Papadakis' method, the impact on bias and efficiency is described by Martin (2006). We refer to our simulations in Section 4.2.6.

Because there is no complete minimal sufficient statistic, the MLE is not *a priori* guaranteed to be optimal. Any claims of optimality need to be demonstrated directly.

Proposition 4.1. *In the AR(1) model with constant mean μ and variance-covariance parameters σ^2 and ρ , and with constant cluster size, the MLE for μ is optimal (in the sense of asymptotically most efficient) and linear in the observations, with weights that depend on the parameters only through ρ .*

Note that this is not the ordinary uniform optimality. In case we demand an estimator that does not depend on the parameters at all, it cannot be uniformly more efficient than the MLE, implying that there is no such uniform estimator. The proof is given in separate Appendix A.9.4. This results offers the opportunity to consider estimators, based on weighting that, while not statistically fully efficient, have computational advantages such as stability (e.g., by being entirely non-iterative) and speed.

Proposition 4.2. *The result of Proposition 4.1 easily generalizes to a mean of the form $\mu = X\beta$, when the design is constant among clusters.*

4.2.5 Clusters of variable size

Hermans et al. (2018c) studied various weighting schemes for clusters of unequal size in the compound-symmetry case. Their work was rooted in the pseudo-likelihood and split-sample methods of Fieuws and Verbeke (2006) and Molenberghs et al. (2011). We will not reproduce their entire argument here, it suffices to focus on the following two-stage procedure:

1. Consider the MLE estimator for each of the K strata, defined by cluster sizes n_k and with c_k replicates. Denote these estimators generically by $\hat{\theta}_k$, with variance V_k .
2. Combine the $\hat{\theta}_k$ in an overall estimator

$$\tilde{\theta}^* = \sum_{k=1}^K A_k \hat{\theta}_k, \quad (4.51)$$

$$\text{var}(\tilde{\theta}^*) = \sum_{k=1}^K A_k V_k A'_k. \quad (4.52)$$

Hermans et al. (2018c) showed that the sum of the weight matrices should be the identity matrix, an obvious result, and considered, among others, the optimal expression:

$$A_k^{\text{opt}} = \left(\sum_{m=1}^K V_m^{-1} \right)^{-1} V_k^{-1}. \quad (4.53)$$

In the AR(1) case the mean and the variance components are asymptotically independent, hence we can consider them separately. Of course, the variance components are still dependent among them.

For a general mean structure $\mu_i^{(k)} = X_i^{(k)'} \boldsymbol{\beta}$, $V_k = \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} X_i^{(k)'} \Sigma_k^{-1} X_i^{(k)'}$, and the above can be applied. Note that $\Sigma_k = \sigma^2 C_k$ with C_k the AR(1) correlation matrix of dimension n_k .

Using optimal weights the $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ coefficients can then be estimated by:

$$\tilde{\boldsymbol{\beta}} = \left(\sum_{k=1}^K \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} X_i^{(k)'} C_k^{-1} X_i^{(k)} \right)^{-1} \left(\sum_{k=1}^K \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} X_i^{(k)'} C_k^{-1} Y_i^{(k)} \right). \quad (4.54)$$

In the special case that the mean is constant, all $X_i^{(k)}$ are vectors of ones and then

$$\text{var}(\hat{\mu}_k) = v_k = \frac{\sigma^2(1+\rho)}{c_k} \cdot \frac{1}{[n_k - (n_k - 2)\rho]}. \quad (4.55)$$

The optimal weight is then

$$a_k = \frac{c_k [n_k - (n_k - 2)\rho]}{\sum_{m=1}^K c_m [n_m - (n_m - 2)\rho]}. \quad (4.56)$$

It is insightful to consider (4.56) in a few special cases:

$$a_k(\rho = 0) = \frac{c_k n_k}{\sum_{m=1}^K c_m n_m}, \quad (4.57)$$

$$a_k(\rho = 1) = \frac{c_k}{\sum_{m=1}^K c_m}, \quad (4.58)$$

$$a_k(\rho = -1) = \frac{c_k(n_k - 1)}{\sum_{m=1}^K c_m(n_m - 1)}. \quad (4.59)$$

Note that, even though the matrix C is singular for $\rho = \pm 1$, by taking limits, expressions can be found also for these cases. For every $\rho \neq 1$, it follows that if the n_k are sufficiently large: $a_k \approx a_k(\rho = 0)$. This implies that in a broad range of cases, except when $\rho = 1$ (or very close to it), the weights are proportional to the number of observations in a stratum, i.e., $c_k n_k$. We term these *size-proportional weights*. When $\rho = 1$ (a case where AR(1) and compound-symmetry coincide), the weights are instead *proportional*, that is, proportional to c_k .

How well the approximation works is seen in a few special cases. When $\rho = 0.5$, $a_k \propto c_k(n_k + 2)$; for $\rho = 0.9$ this becomes $a_k \propto c_k(n_k + 18)$; finally for $\rho = 0.99$, we find $a_k \propto c_k(n_k + 198)$. Thus, for larger correlations, the size-proportionality matches clusters of sizes much larger than actually observed. But again, in practice, it is convenient and reasonable to operate under size-proportionality.

When estimating the variance of

$$\tilde{\mu} = \sum_{k=1}^K a_k \mu_k, \quad (4.60)$$

using (4.56), the fact that the weights depend on ρ_k needs to be taken into account. Applying the delta method to (4.60), and using the variance expressions in both (4.55) and (4.49), we find:

$$\begin{aligned} \text{var}(\tilde{\mu}) &= \frac{\sum_{k=1}^K a'_k \sigma_k^2 (1 + \rho_k)}{\left(\sum_{k=1}^K a'_k \right)^2} + \\ &\quad \frac{\sum_{k=1}^K \left[c_k(n_k - 2) \sum_{m=1}^K a'_m (\mu_k - \mu_m) \right]^2 \frac{1 - \rho_k^2}{c_k(n_k - 1)}}{\left(\sum_{k=1}^K a'_k \right)^4}. \end{aligned} \quad (4.61)$$

We can plug in the stratum-specific $\hat{\rho}_k$ and $\hat{\sigma}_k^2$, or instead use the overall $\hat{\rho}$ and $\hat{\sigma}^2$. In the latter case, (4.61) becomes:

$$\begin{aligned} \text{var}(\tilde{\mu}) &= \sigma^2 (1 + \rho) \left\{ \frac{1}{\sum_{k=1}^K a'_k} \right\} + \\ &\quad (1 - \rho^2) \left\{ \frac{\sum_{k=1}^K \frac{c_k(n_k - 2)^2}{(n_k - 1)} \left[\sum_{m=1}^K a'_m (\mu_k - \mu_m) \right]^2}{\left(\sum_{k=1}^K a'_k \right)^4} \right\}. \end{aligned} \quad (4.62)$$

Turning to the variance components, we start from (4.48), and use $V_k^{-1} c_k(n_k - 1) P$ with

$$P = \begin{pmatrix} \frac{1}{2(\sigma^2)^2} & -\frac{1}{\sigma^2} \cdot \frac{\rho}{1 - \rho^2} \\ -\frac{1}{\sigma^2} \cdot \frac{\rho}{1 - \rho^2} & \frac{1 + \rho^2}{(1 - \rho^2)^2} \end{pmatrix}.$$

Now, clearly, the form of P does not matter because it does not depend on c_k and n_k , that is, it is free of stratum-specific quantities. This leads

to:

$$A_k = \frac{c_k(n_k - 1)}{\sum_{m=1}^K c_m(n_m - 1)} P^{-1} P = \frac{c_k(n_k - 1)}{\sum_{m=1}^K c_m(n_m - 1)} I_2,$$

with I_2 the identity matrix of dimension 2. There are several implications. First, the two variance components have a diagonal weight matrix, implying that mean, variance, and correlation can be treated separately. Second, the variance and correlation have the same sets of weights. Third, they are identical to the weights for the mean when $\rho = -1$. Fourth, because these in themselves are similar to size-proportional weights, we can simplify calculations considerably, especially in large data sets, as follows:

1. Compute $\hat{\mu}_k$, $\hat{\sigma}_k^2$, and $\hat{\rho}$, using the available closed-form expressions for the MLE.
2. Construct a weighted average of these using size-proportional weights.

Given that the MLE for unequal cluster sizes does not exist in closed form and hence requires iteration, this two-stage approach is nearly optimal, non-iterative, and hence fast.

Algebraic details on formulas can be found in separate Appendix A.9.5 and A.9.6.

4.2.6 Computational considerations and simulation study

In the compound-symmetry covariance structure case it has been seen that the proportional weights perform very well. Due to a constant correlation d , additional observations within a cluster contribute increasingly less information relative to that already observed. By contrast, with an AR(1) covariance structure, the roles of c_k and n_k are quite different.

A first simulation study was carried out to compare the use of proportional and size-proportional weights with respect to changes in ρ . The number of clusters c_k is considered large, but the sizes n_k small. These have been chosen such that equal weights would become identical to the size-proportional weights. In this way we may see how proportional weights can work even worse in some cases. In addition, optimal weights and full likelihood were considered in the comparison. The results are presented together with those obtained for the compound-symmetry case by Hermans et al. (2018c).

For the simulation we took: $c_1 = 500$, $c_2 = 250$, $c_3 = 250$, $c_4 = 500$, and $n_1 = 5$, $n_2 = 10$, $n_3 = 10$, $n_4 = 5$. Parameters are set as $\mu = 0$, $\sigma = 2$ and $\rho \in \{0.01, 0.2, 0.5, 0.8, 0.9, 0.95, 0.99\}$. The data are generated 100 times and the model is fitted using PROC MIXED in SAS (for a single overall intercept).

The results show that, in contrast to the CS case, with an AR(1)

covariance structure the size-proportional weights give acceptable results, implying an important role for the clusters sizes, the n_k 's. Proportional weights perform more poorly than equal weights.

The iterative optimal weights will converge in just one iteration (for both CS and AR(1)), which means that iterative optimal weights are nothing but approximated optimal weights. Instead of using $\hat{\theta}_k$ one could also use $\tilde{\theta}$, obtained by using some proper weighting.

In the CS case the iterative optimal weights mainly converge to proportional weights, but with AR(1), they converge to neither proportional nor size-proportional weights. They rather converge to approximated optimal weights which are obtained by substituting the unknown parameter by its estimate using size-proportional weights.

It is observed that, for $\hat{\mu}$ and $\hat{\sigma}^2$, using $\tilde{\theta}$ in optimal weights does not increase the variance to a noticeable degree, but the effect for $\hat{\rho}$ is dramatic. Though it seems that for a larger ρ this effect is diminished. Finding the proper variances when using $\tilde{\theta}$ to approximate optimal weights could be advantageous.

A second simulation study was conducted to compare computation time for closed form solutions to numerical solutions. Using closed form solutions reduces computation time significantly. Details can be found in the separate Appendix A.10.

4.2.7 Application: clinical trials in schizophrenia

The data, introduced in Section 4.2.1, are analysed here. The active treatments are: risperidone, haloperidol, perphenazine, and zuclopentixol. We included for analysis patients with at least one follow-up measurement. Table 4.6 shows the number of patients participating in each trial for all different time patterns in receiving the treatments. As one may see, there are 26 different time patterns, therefore, the final dataset is unbalanced. This makes it suitable for examining the performance of sample splitting according to the cluster size.

For the sake of simplicity, we just take the most frequent cluster pattern for each cluster size. The model used to study the effect of the treatments on the response variable is as follows:

$$Y_{ij} = \mu + \alpha_i + \beta t_{ij} + (\alpha\beta)_{ij} + \epsilon_{ij}, \quad i = 1, \dots, 4, \quad j = 1, \dots, n,$$

$$\epsilon_{ij} \sim N_n(0, R), \quad (4.63)$$

with $R_{\ell m} = \sigma^2 \rho^{|\ell-m|}$ as elements of R , β as the time effect, α_i as the treatment effect, $(\alpha\beta)_{ij}$ as the time and treatment interaction, and μ as the overall mean. For dummy coding, perphenazine has been taken as the reference treatment level.

Table 4.7 shows the treatment levels which appear in the different splits. Not all the treatments are present in each split. In other words, not all the splits are contributing to the estimation of every parameter. This fact should be taken into account for constructing the weights.

For example, for estimating levomepromazine effect, just the first two splits are contributing, therefore, we have ($c_1 = 142, n_1 = 2$) and ($c_2 = 143, n_2 = 3$), which give proportional weights as (0.498, 0.502), and the size-proportional weights as (0.398, 0.602).

Table 4.8 shows the parameter estimates using sample splitting with proportional and size-proportional weights, compared to the full sample data. Note that, while the point estimates, for example for Zuclopenthixol, differ even in signs, this has to be seen against the background of the precision estimates; their confidence intervals largely overlap.

As mentioned previously, these data are assembled from 5 trials. It might be useful to include the trial and its interaction with the variables already in the model (4.63) to control for the trial effect:

$$Y_{ijk} = \mu + \tau_i + \alpha_j + \beta t_{ij} + (\tau\alpha)_{ij} + (\tau\beta)_{ik} + (\alpha\beta)_{jk} + (\tau\alpha\beta)_{ijk} + \epsilon_{ijk}, \\ i = 1, \dots, 5, j = 1, \dots, 4, k = 1, \dots, n, \epsilon_{ijk} \sim N_n(0, R), \quad (4.64)$$

with $R_{\ell m} = \sigma^2 \rho^{|\ell-m|}$ as elements of R , β as the time effect, α_j as the treatment effect, τ_i as the trial effect, $(\tau\alpha)_{ij}$ as the trial and treatment interaction, $(\tau\beta)_{ik}$ as the trial and time interaction, $(\alpha\beta)_{jk}$ as the treatment and time interaction, $(\tau\alpha\beta)_{ijk}$ as the three-way trial, treatment and time interaction, and μ as the overall mean.

Table 4.9 shows the estimates for the parameters of interest in this model.

Justification of the chosen model and further details as confidence limits of the tabulated estimates can be found in separate Appendix A.11.

4.2.8 Concluding remarks

As an extension to the normal-compound symmetry model, discussed in Hermans et al. (2018c), the normal AR(1) model was studied in the light of computationally effective estimation for clustered data with unequal cluster sizes.

For constant cluster size there are closed-form solutions but no complete minimal sufficient statistics. However the MLE is shown to be optimal, with weights depending on ρ for the mean. Returning to unequal cluster sizes, there are, in general, no closed form solutions. But again estimators have been obtained using a two-stage procedure. Estimators are calculated separately within each stratum (typically defined by cluster size) and combined in an overall estimator. Both theoretical and simulation results show excellent performance of the size-proportional weights, that is through weighting according to the number of measurements in a cluster ($c_k \cdot n_k$), rather than the number of clusters c_k in a subsample, that is, proportional weights. By contrast, the latter are a good choice for the compound-symmetry structure. Under AR(1) they are worse than equal weights. Approximate optimal weights can also be used, but this leads to an estimate of ρ with a large sample variance. In practice, it is convenient and appropriate to use size-proportional weights; these are parameter free and simple to use. Simulations show, that in certain

large settings, computation time can be 1000 times faster than with standard maximum likelihood.

There are missing observations in the PANSS data set. One might therefore consider possible dependencies between cluster size and the outcomes themselves. To handle such informative cluster sizes it might be of interest to extend the current methodology of this paper to a joint model including cluster size. This is a topic for further research.

For non-normal data, no corresponding closed-form formulations are possible. While gains will be less, there might still be computational advantages, in terms of time and stability, in analyzing the data in cluster-size dependent strata, followed by weighting the so-obtained estimates.

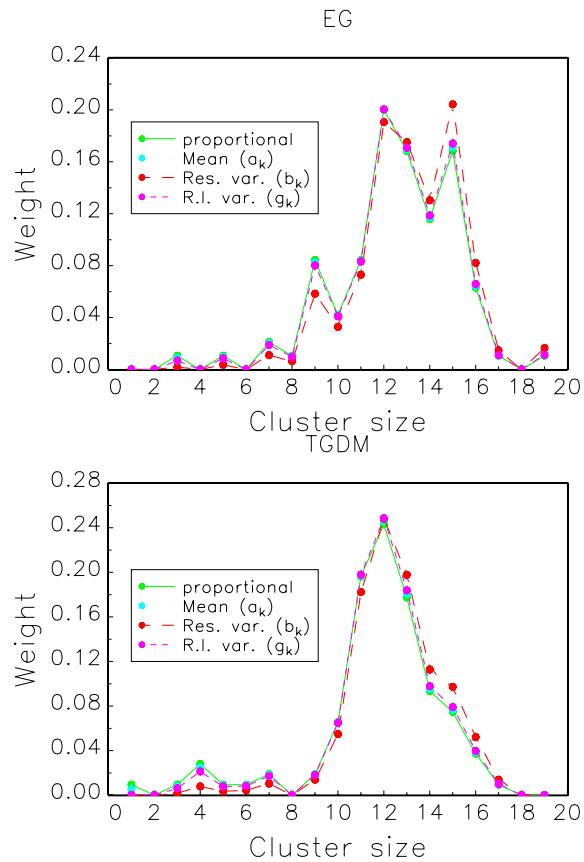


Figure 4.1: NTP Data. Scalar weights: proportional and optimal scalar versions for EG and TGDM datasets. The optimal scalar weights are computed for $\rho = d/(\sigma^2 + d) = 0.5$.

Table 4.5: NTP Data (with dose effect). Splitting by cluster size. Maximum likelihood and weighted split-sample estimates (standard errors): (a) ML: maximum likelihood; (b) REML: restricted maximum likelihood; (c) Prop.: proportional weights; (d) Equal: equal weights; (e) Approx. sc.: like proportional weights, except that for b_k (4.31) is used.

Par.	ML	REML	Prop.	Equal	Approx. sc.
DEHP					
Interc. β_0	0.96986	0.96987	0.95982	0.95269	0.95982
Dose eff. β_1	-0.00077	-0.00077	-0.00042	-0.00029	-0.00042
σ^2	0.01876	0.01876	0.02122	0.02244	0.01895
d	0.00772	0.00792	0.00538	0.00508	0.00538
s.e.($\widehat{\beta_0}$)	0.01343	0.01357	0.01343	0.01609	0.01343
s.e.($\widehat{\beta_1}$)	0.00012	0.00012	0.00014	0.00018	0.00014
s.e.($\widehat{\sigma^2}$)	0.00084	0.00084	0.00128	0.00199	0.00094
s.e.(\widehat{d})	0.00136	0.00141	0.00137	0.00204	0.00137
EG					
Interc. β_0	0.94228	0.94229	0.94654	0.95320	0.94654
Dose eff. β_1	-0.00009	-0.00009	-0.00010	-0.00010	-0.00010
σ^2	0.00879	0.00879	0.00847	0.00847	0.00833
d	0.00745	0.00765	0.00625	0.00593	0.00625
s.e.($\widehat{\beta_0}$)	0.01453	0.01470	0.01389	0.01406	0.01389
s.e.($\widehat{\beta_1}$)	0.00001	0.00001	0.00001	0.00001	0.00001
s.e.($\widehat{\sigma^2}$)	0.00041	0.00041	0.00044	0.00049	0.00042
s.e.(\widehat{d})	0.00126	0.00130	0.00108	0.00107	0.00108
DYME					
Interc. β_0	1.01875	1.01876	1.02364	1.03680	1.02364
Dose eff. β_1	-0.00102	-0.00102	-0.00099	-0.00100	-0.00099
σ^2	0.01032	0.01032	0.01072	0.01071	0.01034
d	0.00795	0.00813	0.00581	0.00631	0.00581
s.e.($\widehat{\beta_0}$)	0.01356	0.01370	0.01335	0.02000	0.01335
s.e.($\widehat{\beta_1}$)	0.00006	0.00006	0.00006	0.00007	0.00006
s.e.($\widehat{\sigma^2}$)	0.00044	0.00044	0.00052	0.00079	0.00047
s.e.(\widehat{d})	0.00126	0.00130	0.00110	0.00205	0.00110

Table 4.6: PANSS data. Number of clusters in each trial for each cluster pattern. The pattern consists of the numbers representing the months after starting point for which a PANSS score is available.

n	Pattern	Trial					Total
		FIN-1	FRA-3	INT-2	INT-3	INT-7	
2	(0, 1)	17	8	71	43	3	142
	(0, 2)	0	0	2	0	1	3
	(0, 4)	0	0	1	0	0	1
3	(0, 1, 2)	8	4	83	41	7	143
	(0, 2, 4)	0	0	2	0	0	2
	(0, 1, 4)	1	0	3	1	0	5
4	(0, 1, 2, 4)	11	0	85	66	5	167
	(0, 2, 4, 6)	0	0	1	0	1	2
	(0, 2, 4, 8)	0	0	1	0	0	1
	(0, 1, 2, 6)	0	0	3	0	0	3
	(0, 1, 2, 3)	0	4	1	0	0	5
	(0, 1, 3, 6)	0	1	0	0	0	1
	(0, 2, 6, 8)	0	0	0	0	1	1
	(0, 1, 2, 4, 6)	58	0	85	35	6	184
5	(0, 1, 2, 4, 8)	0	0	8	0	1	9
	(0, 1, 4, 6, 8)	0	0	6	0	0	6
	(0, 1, 2, 6, 8)	0	0	8	0	0	8
	(0, 2, 4, 6, 8)	0	0	3	0	2	5
	(0, 2, 4, 8, 12)	0	0	1	0	0	1
	(0, 1, 2, 3, 4)	0	44	0	0	0	44
	(0, 1, 3, 4, 5)	0	1	0	0	0	1
	(0, 1, 2, 4, 6, 8)	0	0	986	240	74	1300
6	(0, 1, 4, 6, 8, 10)	0	0	1	0	0	1
	(0, 1, 2, 6, 8, 12)	0	0	1	0	0	1
	(0, 1, 2, 4, 6, 10)	0	0	1	0	0	1
	(0, 1, 2, 4, 5, 6)	0	0	2	0	0	2

Table 4.7: PANSS data. Contributing splits in estimating each parameter. A checkmark signifies that a split contributes, a hyphen the reverse.

Parameter	Split 1	Split 2	Split 3	Split 4	Split 5
Intercept	✓	✓	✓	✓	✓
time	✓	✓	✓	✓	✓
haloperidol	✓	✓	✓	✓	✓
levomepromazine	✓	✓	-	-	-
risperidone	✓	✓	✓	✓	✓
zuclopentixol	✓	✓	✓	✓	-
t^* haloperidol	✓	✓	✓	✓	✓
t^* levomepromazine	✓	✓	-	-	-
t^* risperidone	✓	✓	✓	✓	✓
t^* zuclopentixol	✓	✓	✓	✓	-
correlation ρ	✓	✓	✓	✓	✓
variance σ^2	✓	✓	✓	✓	✓

Table 4.8: PANSS data. Estimating fixed effects and variance components and the standard deviations of these estimates using sample splitting (combined with proportional (Prop.) and size-proportional (Size.Prop.) weights) and full likelihood. The model used in here is without trial effect (4.63).

Effect	Par.	Prop.	Size Prop.	Full
Intercept	μ	89.218 (3.036)	88.167 (2.956)	88.532 (2.965)
Haloperidol	α_1	-1.916 (3.254)	-1.868 (3.191)	-0.140 (3.181)
Levomepromazine	α_2	11.823 (14.155)	8.402 (14.366)	32.018 (9.729)
Risperidone	α_3	-1.474 (3.079)	-0.812 (3.000)	-0.481 (3.009)
Zuclopentixol	α_4	-1.926 (7.245)	0.146 (7.216)	2.647 (4.187)
time	β	-3.047 (1.057)	-2.890 (0.613)	-2.928 (0.447)
time \times haloperidol	$(\alpha\beta)_1$	2.146 (1.108)	1.568 (0.652)	1.068 (0.482)
time \times levomepromazine	$(\alpha\beta)_2$	6.466 (9.006)	6.924 (8.668)	3.350 (4.501)
time \times risperidone	$(\alpha\beta)_3$	1.831 (1.070)	1.243 (0.621)	0.842 (0.454)
time \times zuclopentixol	$(\alpha\beta)_4$	1.551 (3.609)	1.103 (2.655)	0.533 (0.743)
Correlation	ρ	0.805 (0.006)	0.818 (0.005)	0.825 (0.005)
Variance	σ^2	419.782 (10.202)	412.850 (10.018)	429.611 (10.363)

Table 4.9: PANSS data. Estimating fixed effects and variance components and the standard deviations of these estimates using sample splitting (combined with proportional (Prop.) and size-proportional (Size.Prop.) weights) and full likelihood. The model used in here is with trial effect (4.64).

Effect	Par.	Prop.	Size Prop.	Full
Intercept	μ	89.217 (3.016)	88.165 (2.949)	88.529 (2.950)
Haloperidol	α_1	2.249 (5.239)	1.491 (5.053)	5.878 (4.779)
Levomepromazine	α_2	-9.213 (22.578)	-12.044 (21.761)	6.673 (15.611)
Risperidone	α_3	2.353 (4.542)	2.956 (4.216)	3.132 (4.107)
Zuclopenthixol	α_4	-2.135 (11.617)	-0.877 (11.509)	3.144 (5.845)
time	β	-3.047 (1.049)	-2.890 (0.610)	-2.929 (0.446)
time \times haloperidol	$(\alpha\beta)_1$	2.170 (1.835)	1.294 (1.056)	0.623 (0.738)
time \times levomepromazine	$(\alpha\beta)_2$	16.104 (15.080)	17.287 (13.763)	13.812 (6.923)
time \times risperidone	$(\alpha\beta)_3$	1.766 (1.716)	0.794 (0.947)	0.176 (0.613)
time \times zuclopenthixol	$(\alpha\beta)_4$	5.218 (5.746)	2.041 (4.188)	0.326 (1.027)
Correlation	ρ	0.804 (0.006)	0.818 (0.005)	0.824 (0.005)
Variance	σ^2	416.190 (10.139)	410.819 (10.006)	425.741 (10.257)

CHAPTER 5

RANDOM VERTICAL SPLITTING

One of the situations that could create big clustered data is where the cluster sizes are becoming large. For such cases, data splitting at cluster level would not be able to solve the issue. Therefore, one may need to perform the splitting for the observations within each subject. There are several ways to perform this splitting. Molenberghs et al. (2011) considered non-overlapping vertical clusters. Here we propose the *iterative multiple outputation* (IMO) as a general framework to perform random vertical splitting which can be applied to a wide range of problems. In the rest of this chapter, first we introduce the IMO procedure, followed by a discussion on determining the number of required sub-samples (for more details on this topic see Section 7.1).

Then an important special case of random vertical splitting will be studied in detail where only a few sub-samples (sometimes even one) would be sufficient to obtain correct estimates. We call such estimators the finite information limit estimators.

5.1 Iterative multiple outputation

As we have already discussed in Section 1.4.3, iterative multiple outputation (IMO) procedure is introduced as follows,

1. **Start.** Select an initial number of sub-samples, M_0 , and sub-sampling size m . Take M_0 sub-samples of size m , fit the model to each and obtain $\widehat{\theta}_i$ and its variance $\Sigma_{\widehat{\theta}_i}$ ($i = 1, \dots, M_0$). Then compute

$$\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{M_0} = \sum_{i=1}^{M_0} \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_i, \quad \widetilde{\Sigma}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}_{M_0}} = \widehat{W}_{M_0} - \left(\frac{M_0 + 1}{M_0} \right) \widehat{B}_{M_0}. \quad (5.1)$$

2. **Update.** For sub-sampling size $m > M_0$,

$$\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} = \frac{m\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m + \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}}{m+1}, \quad \widetilde{\Sigma}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}_{m+1}} = \widehat{W}_{m+1} - \left(\frac{m+1}{m} \right) \widehat{B}_{m+1}. \quad (5.2)$$

3. **Distance.** Compute: $d_{m+1} = d(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}, \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m)$ using an appropriate distance.
4. **Stopping rule.** $d_j < \varepsilon$ for $j = m + 1, \dots, m + k_0$.

Where for $m = r$ we have,

$$\widehat{W}_r = \frac{\sum_{i=1}^r \sigma_{\widehat{\theta}_i}}{r}, \quad \widehat{B}_r = \frac{\sum_{i=1}^r (\widehat{\theta}_i - \widetilde{\theta}_r)(\widehat{\theta}_i - \widetilde{\theta}_r)'}{r-1}. \quad (5.3)$$

One important step in this procedure is the Stopping rule where we need to decide when to stop sub-sampling. It is important because early termination of the procedure would lead to imprecise results, and continuing too long would be against the initial motivation behind using such a procedure which was saving time.

The stopping rule in IMO is inspired by our work on iterative multiple imputation (Section 7.1). An important aspect of this procedure is to find an appropriate distance in step 3. The distance selected in this step will basically determine how many sub-samples are sufficient to obtain valid results. More details on different possible candidate distances and their pros and cons are discussed in Section 7.1. In brief, we propose to use Mahalanobis distance (Mahalanobis, 1936) between estimated parameters and their covariance matrices between two successive steps.

$$d_{m+1}^{\text{Mah}} = \sqrt{(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} - \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m)^T S^{-1} (\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} - \widetilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m)}, \quad (5.4)$$

For S in (5.4) we proposed to use the combined covariance matrix at step $m + 1$. More details on the reasons behind this choice can be found in Section 7.1.

Furthermore, as one may see, the procedure will terminate if the stopping

rule stays valid for k_0 successive steps. That is to prevent an early termination, because the convergence here is not monotone. In an extensive simulation study we have observed $k_0 = 3$ is a reasonable choice (see Section 7.1).

5.1.1 Efficient sub-sampling

While the sub-sampling would create smaller datasets that need less time to be analyzed, the task of sub-sampling itself could become cumbersome for very large number of clusters. For such situations we propose to use the idea of structured horizontal data splitting to take the sub-samples.

We have proposed in Chapter 4 to split the clustered data based on the cluster sizes such that every split contains clusters of equal sizes. We have discussed how this can enhance computations. Here, we have observed that the same idea can be applied to accelerate the sub-sampling step. If the sub-sampling takes place cluster by cluster, it could become very expensive when the number of clusters becomes large. In such a case, even using parallel computations would not help much, unless an enormous amount of computation power is at hand.

When all clusters are of equal size, the sub-set selection can be done at once for all of them. Therefore, a practical solution is first to split the data based on their cluster sizes, then take the sub-samples from each of these sub-sets. Considering the fact that the unique cluster sizes are not usually too variable, this task can easily be distributed among different machines.

To illustrate, consider a sample with the following cluster sizes:

ID1	ID2	ID3	ID4	ID5	ID6	ID7
5	7	3	3	5	7	5

To implement this idea, we proposed the following steps,

- Step1. Take all clusters which their size is smaller than or equal to m (the predefined sub-sampling size). For example, if $m = 4$ then all clusters of size ≤ 4 will always be fully presented in all of the sub-samples. The remaining unique cluster sizes will be 5 and 7.
- Step2. For each of the remaining unique cluster sizes (where $n_k > m$), repeat the following steps:
 - (a) Select all clusters with unique size n_k , call c_k the number of such clusters. For example, for $n_k = 5$, c_k will be 3, as we have 3 clusters $ID1$, $ID5$ and $ID7$ with size 5.
 - (b) Generate $n_k \times c_k$ random numbers (e.g., from a standard normal distribution) and put them in a matrix of size $n_k \times c_k$. For example, for $n_k = 5$ with $c_k = 3$ one should generate 15 random numbers formed as a 5×3 matrix:

$$\begin{array}{ccc}
 0.955 & 0.434 & -0.196 \\
 -0.861 & 1.319 & -0.245 \\
 2.594 & -0.274 & 0.272 \\
 0.465 & -0.355 & -0.595 \\
 1.131 & -0.311 & -1.034
 \end{array}$$

- (c) Order the columns of the matrix in the previous step. For example, the following matrix shows a permutation which rearranges columns of the matrix in the previous step in an ascending order:

$$\begin{array}{ccc} 2 & 4 & 5 \\ 4 & 5 & 4 \\ 1 & 3 & 2 \\ 5 & 1 & 1 \\ 3 & 2 & 3 \end{array}$$

- (d) The first m rows of this matrix are the indexes of the observations we should select from each cluster of size n_k . For example, for $m = 4$, and $n_k = 5$, we will have:

$$\begin{array}{ccc} 2 & 4 & 5 \\ 4 & 5 & 4 \\ 1 & 3 & 2 \\ 5 & 1 & 1 \end{array}$$

so, from the first cluster (ID1) we will select the second, the fourth, first, and the fifth observations in our sub-sample.

We have implemented this procedure in R (see R package `miscVSS` introduced in Section 8.3), but it can as well be implemented in any other programming language.

5.2 Finite information limit estimators: is the entire dataset needed for analysis?

In this section a special case of random vertical splitting is considered that only a few or even one sub-sample would be sufficient to derive valid results.

5.2.1 Introduction

Sample size has always been an issue in statistical analysis. While for many years small sample sizes were a central issue, in recent years, large sample sizes too might confront the statistical analyst with serious problems. When large to huge sample sizes concur with complex models, prohibitive computation times, convergence issues, and the mere impossibility to analyze the data with the preferred inferential technique (e.g., full maximum likelihood) can ensue. While in the simplest designs all measurements are independent, many designs lead to hierarchical (a.k.a., clustered, correlated, dependent) data Laird et al. (1982); Zeger and Liang (1986); Verbeke and Molenberghs (2000). By cluster here we mean a set of measurements collected for one single unit (e.g., subject, household, trial, etc.). Therefore, the number of repetitions refers to number of measurements available per cluster. Examples include: patients measured repeatedly over time, several patients attending the same general practitioner or clinic, several links clicked by a specific user, genetic data available for a person, etc. Accounting for the correlation remains a challenge today, when the total number of clusters is large and/or there

are a large number of repetitions per cluster. Sometimes, computations become prohibitive. Indeed, Table 5.1 shows the computation time for estimating parameters of a multivariate normal vector of varying length, with constant mean μ and compound-symmetry covariance matrix (CS; which considers constant variance and equal correlation between every pair of variables; see Section 5.2.2). The model is fitted using the MIXED procedure in SAS 9.4 for Windows. As one may see, by increasing the cluster size, the computation time increases dramatically, and after some point, computation is no longer feasible.

Table 5.1: Computation time t (in seconds) for clustered data with unique cluster sizes $n_k \cdot 10^i$, with $n_k = 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10$ and $i = 0, 1, 2, 3, 4$, and with 100 clusters from each n_k (600 clusters in total).

n_k	$n_k \times 10^0$	$n_k \times 10^1$	$n_k \times 10^2$	$n_k \times 10^3$
t	1.76	2.47	1016.96	ERROR*

* The SAS System's message: "ERROR: The SAS System stopped processing this step because of insufficient memory."

There are several approaches to deal with large clustered data sets, such as splitting the large sample either at the subject level or at measurement level (Molenberghs et al., 2011). They proposed combination rules based on pseudo-likelihood theory. On the other hand, Hermans et al. (2018c,b) suggested splitting a large sample along unique cluster sizes, such that each sub-sample becomes balanced, i.e., formed of clusters of equal sizes, leading to closed-form (weighted) and efficient solutions (Hermans et al., 2018a). A permutation-based solution was proposed and applied by Milanzi et al. (2014). A semi-parallel approach was adopted by Sikorska

et al. (2013b,a) to deal with large clustered data stemming from genome-wide association studies. Further, Otava et al. (2014) employed Bayesian approaches to tackle large clustered datasets.

In this paper, we focus on the special case where the number of clusters may or may not be large, but where definitely each or at least some clusters are very to extremely large. The nature of the problem is that the variance-covariance matrix of a cluster usually is not of a diagonal form, such as $\sigma^2 I$, but instead a variance-covariance matrix Σ with non-zero off-diagonal elements is assumed to capture correlation. A typical example is compound-symmetry.

Consider Y_{ij} as the outcome of interest, measured on independent clusters $i = 1, \dots, N$ with $j = 1, \dots, n_i$ measurements per cluster. Outcomes from cluster i are grouped into \mathbf{Y}_i . Faes et al. (2009) studied the so-called effective sample size for such data. It is defined as the number of independent measurements that leads to the same amount of information as the clustered data under investigation. It can be formulated at the level of an individual cluster or for the dataset as a whole. For a cluster of size n_i and non-negative correlation, it lies somewhere between 1 (if correlation is 1) and n_i (if correlation is 0). Strictly speaking, for negative correlation, it will exceed n_i , but such cases are rare in practice and require separate investigation altogether. Intuitively, this is because cluster replications share information and hence additional members of a clusters do not provide as much information as would come from an independent replicate. The effective sample size depends, apart from n_i ,

on the magnitude of the correlation as well as on the specific form of the correlation matrix (e.g., CS, autoregressive, etc.)

Based on Faes et al. (2009), we will show that, for specific correlation structures, a very large fraction of the information in a cluster can be captured by considering only a small subset of it. CS being a special case, the general class of structures with this property will be termed to possess the Finite Information Limit (FIL) property. It is specific to an estimator, rather than to a data generating model as a whole. For example, the FIL may apply to a mean estimator but not a contrast parameter in a CS model. The computational prospects are considerable, for example, in a case where analyzing a 1% subsample leads to estimators nearly as efficient as their conventional counterparts based on the entire dataset. Note that the results here are extensions from a proceedings contribution (Nassiri et al., 2016). In the current paper more general cases, such as sub-sampling more than once, are discussed and investigated. Also, the Amazon books ratings are analyzed as an illustrative application.

CS, as a generic example, is examined in Section 5.2.2. The FIL property is defined in Section 5.2.3 and extended in Section 5.2.4. A simple procedure to detect FIL and to determine a fraction for sub-sampling is proposed in that section, too. Simulation studies are presented in Sections 5.2.3 and 5.2.4. The FIL property is studied in a data of Amazon website book ratings in Section 5.2.5. Finally, Section 5.2.6 concludes the paper.

5.2.2 A compound-symmetry model

Consider the data setting of the previous section with further $\mathbf{Y}_i \sim N(\mu \mathbf{1}_{n_i}, \Sigma_i)$ and $\Sigma_i = \sigma^2 I_{n_i} + \tau J_{n_i}$, where $\mathbf{1}_{n_i}$ is an all-ones vector of length n_i , I_{n_i} is an identity matrix of order n_i , and J_{n_i} is an all-ones square matrix of order n_i . In other words, it features constant variance and equal correlation between every pair of variables. The CS covariance structure is also called exchangeable or equicorrelated in the literature. Wherever possible without ambiguity, the index i will be dropped from notation and we will focus on a ‘generic cluster’.

The FIL property is rooted in the effective sample size (ESS) concept (Faes et al., 2009). The ESS is the number of independent observations needed to reach the same amount of information for a particular estimator as in the original, clustered dataset. For the CS structure, Faes et al. (2009) have shown that the ESS \tilde{n} for estimating a common mean μ from a cluster of size n is:

$$\tilde{n} = \frac{n}{1 + \rho(n - 1)}, \quad \text{where } \rho = \frac{\tau}{\sigma^2 + \tau}. \quad (5.5)$$

The ESS for the entire dataset, \tilde{N} say, follows from summing the corresponding \tilde{n}_i over all clusters.

Figure 5.1 (first row) shows the effective sample sizes in the CS case for $\rho = \{0.2, 0.5, 0.8\}$ and $n = \{1, 2, \dots, 100\}$. As one may see, the effective sample size in the CS case converges to an asymptote. This value decreases with increasing ρ . But no matter the non-zero value of

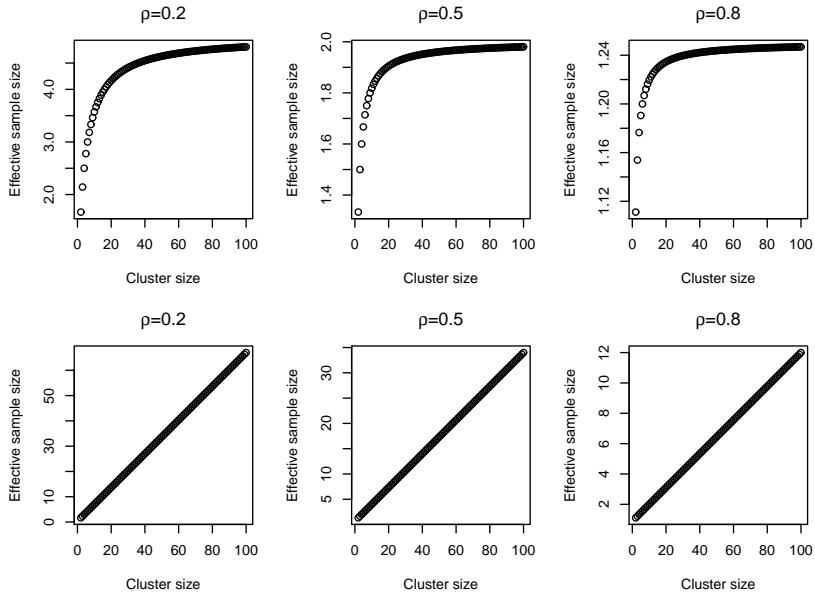


Figure 5.1: The effective sample sizes (vertical axis) for different cluster sizes for CS (first row) and AR(1) (second row) covariance structures for different correlation values ρ .

ρ , the effective sample size is bounded from above. This follows as the limit of (5.5):

$$\lim_{n_i \rightarrow \infty} \frac{n_i}{1 + \rho(n_i - 1)} = \frac{1}{\rho}. \quad (5.6)$$

This property is called the information limit by Faes et al. (2009). Note that this does not apply to negative ρ . In that case, the lower limit of the correlation depends on n , as it equals $-1/(n - 1)$. In other words, should $n \rightarrow \infty$, the correlation cannot be smaller than 0, contradicting a negative correlation. Thus, it is sensible to restrict attention to non-

negative correlation. This lower bound for the intra-class correlation, ρ , comes from the fact that for a smaller ρ the covariance matrix will be non-positive definite, i.e., the variance would be negative.

For positive correlation, the amount of information from CS clusters is bounded from above. As a consequence, after some point, adding more replications to a cluster would no longer lead to useful efficiency improvements.

To make this point more clearly, consider the variance of estimating the parameter μ of a multivariate normal vector with CS covariance structure using N clusters all of size n . This variance is (Molenberghs et al., 2011):

$$\text{Var}(\hat{\mu}_n) = \frac{\sigma^2 + n\tau}{Nn} = \frac{\sigma^2}{Nn} \frac{(\sigma^2 + n\tau)}{\sigma^2}. \quad (5.7)$$

The quantity σ^2/Nn is the variance of $\hat{\mu}_n$ if the data were uncorrelated ($\tau = 0$), the factor $\sigma^2 + n\tau/\sigma^2 > 1$ is the price we pay because of non-zero correlation in terms of variance. This quantity is often called the variance inflation factor (VIF), i.e., the correlation inflates the variance comparing with the case of non-correlated data. As non-zero correlation would inflate the variance, it deflates the information. We may define the variance deflation factor, VDF, as $1/\text{VIF}$. As one may see, for the CS case, the VIF goes to infinity as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Hence, VDF goes to zero.

The asymptotic relative efficiency (ARE) of estimating μ with N clusters of size $n \rightarrow \infty$, compared to estimating it using N clusters of finite size

$n_f < \infty$ is:

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\text{Var}(\hat{\mu}_{n_f})}{\text{Var}(\hat{\mu}_n)} = \frac{\sigma^2 + \tau n_f}{\tau n_f} = 1 + \frac{(1 - \rho)}{n_f \rho} > 1. \quad (5.8)$$

(This definition, rather than its inverse, is used because ensuing expressions are easiest to manipulate.) Therefore, using a finite random subset of each cluster, the ARE is finite. Hence, one may choose n_f such that the efficiency loss compared to clusters of infinite size becomes arbitrarily small. Indeed, for given ρ , set the required ARE equal to $1 + \varepsilon$. Then,

$$n_f = \frac{1 - \rho}{\rho \varepsilon} = \frac{\sigma^2}{\tau \varepsilon}. \quad (5.9)$$

For example, set $\varepsilon = 0.01$, a very small increase of variability. For $\rho = 0.5$, $n_f = 100$ would reach this goal. Should $\rho = 0.9$, then $n_f \simeq 11$ would fulfill the requirement. These are important reductions in big-data settings, or whenever n_f/n becomes very small. The corresponding expression for finite (typically large) n is:

$$n_f = \frac{n(1 - \rho)}{\varepsilon(1 + \rho + n\rho) + 1 + \rho}.$$

Considering (5.7), with a cluster of infinite size, the variance is:

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\sigma^2 + n\tau}{Nn} = \frac{\tau}{N}. \quad (5.10)$$

In other words, with the given number of clusters, the minimum variance we can reach is (5.10). That is to say, in such a situation, for a given

number of clusters, increasing the cluster sizes cannot make the variance smaller than a specific value. Obtaining a smaller variance is still possible by adding new clusters (increasing N). Such considerations can be found in the literature on determining sample and cluster sizes for cluster randomized trials. For example, Teerenstra et al. (2008) have considered a 3-level model, with CS structure for variance at both levels (each with its own correlation); Teerenstra et al. (2010) extended these calculations to generalized linear models. The information limit property of CS-based estimators is considered from a different point of view in Feng et al. (2001), Guittet et al. (2005), and Hemming et al. (2011).

5.2.3 Finite information limit (FIL) estimators

It is useful to generally define FIL. We also examine some other examples, and provide an important counterexample.

Consider the same clustered setting as before. Let $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ be the parameter of interest and $\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$ a corresponding estimator. Then, $\text{Cov}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})$ has the FIL property if, for fixed N , $\lim_{n_i \rightarrow \infty} \mathcal{I}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}} < \infty$, where $\mathcal{I}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}} = \text{Cov}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})^{-1}$ is the Fisher information.

The practical implication is the same as with CS. Let us say that there are K unique cluster sizes among the n_i ; index these as n_k and assume that for each k there are c_k clusters in the dataset. Then, $N = \sum_{k=1}^K c_k$. Because of FIL, one can consider a cluster size n_f , ideally $n_f \ll \min_k \{n_k\}$, such that the efficiency loss is less than a small, pre-specified amount. In some cases, it may be necessary to include all

data from the subset of smaller clusters, while sub-sampling the larger clusters.

In effective sample size terminology, the estimator $\hat{\theta}$ has the FIL property if and only if the difference between effective sample sizes of original and sub-sampled data can be made arbitrarily small. Adopting a VDF viewpoint, $\hat{\theta}$ has the FIL property, if as the cluster size $n \rightarrow \infty$, the VDF goes to zero with at least linear rate.

While CS is a clear example, it is not the only one. Multivariate normal models with variance-covariance structure where the correlation between two replications within a cluster does not approach zero with increasing (spatial or temporal) distance between them are FIL candidates. These include correlation structures induced by linear mixed models with, for example, random intercept and random slope in time. For practical examples, consider craniofacial growth in rats (Verdonck et al., 1998), several products examined by an expert panel (Milanzi et al., 2014), genetic data where long sequences of genetic data are available for each subject (Sikorska et al., 2013b), etc.

Consider a linear mixed model $\mathbf{Y}_i \sim N(X_i\beta, \Sigma_i)$, where $X_i\beta = \mu\mathbf{1}$ and $\Sigma_i = Z_i D Z_i + V_i$. Obviously, the $\bar{\mathbf{Y}} = 1/n(\mathbf{1}'\mathbf{Y}_i) \sim N(\mu, 1/n^2\mathbf{1}'\Sigma_i\mathbf{1})$. The FIL exists if the variance $1/n^2\mathbf{1}'\Sigma_i\mathbf{1}$ does not go to zero when cluster size tends to infinity. In other words, for a \sqrt{n} -consistent estimator, FIL does not apply.

Evidently, a linear mixed model with only a random intercept and

independent errors with variance σ^2 is identical to the CS model. We have already seen that FIL exists in such a case. For a linear mixed model with random intercept b_{0i} and random slope b_{1i} in time one can derive,

$$\text{Var}(\widehat{\mu}_{IS}) = d_{22} \frac{(n+1)^2}{4} + d_{12}(n+1) + d_{11} + \frac{\sigma^2}{n},$$

where $d_{11} = \text{Var}(b_{0i})$, $d_{22} = \text{Var}(b_{1i})$ and $d_{12} = \text{Cov}(b_{0i}, b_{1i})$. Also, IS in μ_{IS} refers to a random intercept-slope model. Obviously, as $n \rightarrow \infty$, $\text{Var}(\widehat{\mu}_{IS}) \rightarrow \infty$, so $\mathcal{I}_{\widehat{\mu}_{IS}}$ is finite and FIL applies in this case as well. If one also looks at the VDF here, it goes to zero at a cubic rate.

Considering the CS case with $\rho = 0$, this would be an independent identically distributed sample from $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$. It is well-known and also straightforward to see that the estimator of μ is \sqrt{n} -consistent in this case, hence its variance goes to 0 as n tends to infinity. Therefore, the information is unbounded. However, such \sqrt{n} -consistent estimators are not specific to independent (non-clustered) data. It can happen for correlated (clustered) data as well.

A clear counterexample of non-FIL for clustered data is the multivariate normal vector with first-order autoregressive (AR(1)) variance-covariance. Then, $\Sigma = \sigma^2 C_n$ where the (j, k) element of C_n is $\rho^{|j-k|}$. Clearly, the correlation between Y_{ij} and Y_{ik} decreases rapidly with $|j - k|$.

The variance of $\widehat{\mu}$ in this case, based on N clusters of size n , is (Hermans

et al., 2018b):

$$\text{Var}(\hat{\mu}_{AR1}) = \frac{\sigma^2(1 + \rho)}{N[n - (n - 2)\rho]}. \quad (5.11)$$

Obviously,

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{\text{Var}(\hat{\mu}_{AR1})} = \infty. \quad (5.12)$$

The ARE of $\text{Var}(\hat{\mu}_{AR1})$ when using $n_f < n$ measurements from each cluster, when $n \rightarrow \infty$, is:

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\text{Var}(\hat{\mu}_{n_f})}{\text{Var}(\hat{\mu}_n)} = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{(1 - \rho)n + 2\rho}{(1 - \rho)n_f + 2\rho} = \infty. \quad (5.13)$$

The above follows from the ESS as well. For AR(1), one can derive (Faes et al., 2009):

$$\tilde{n} = \frac{n - (n - 2)\rho}{1 + \rho}. \quad (5.14)$$

Figure 5.1 (second row) shows the effective sample sizes in the AR(1) case for $\rho = \{0.2, 0.5, 0.8\}$ and $n = \{1, 2, \dots, 100\}$. As one may see, from (5.14) and the figure, and in contrast to the CS case, no matter what is ρ or n , the effective sample size does not converge to any asymptote. Of course, because of the correlation, the ESS is less than n ; for larger ρ 's, the ESS is smaller, but it is not bounded from above. For example, when $\rho = 0.5$, $\tilde{n} = (n + 2)/3$; for $\rho = 0.9$, we find $\tilde{n} = (n + 18)/19$. Hence, there is no information limit and adding cluster replications will add

information without approaching a limit. Related, one may verify that the VDF for AR(1) case does not goes to zero neither. This property ensures that time-series analysis works for AR(1) structures or one of the many generalizations thereof.

It is worth remarking that, in cases such as AR(1), increasing the cluster size means increasing the distance, $|j - k|$, (spatially, temporally, etc.) between measurements. As is implied by the structure, that would make the correlation smaller, so unlike in cases with FIL property, the correlation here is not persistent. In other words, no matter how large the correlation, if the lag between two measures increases, the correlation between them will become arbitrarily small, so the information added by such a new measurement will become virtually the same as for an independent additional measurement. Therefore, the information is not bounded in such structures.

Although FIL cannot be used to deal with high-dimensional AR(1) data, there are other possible solutions. Recently, Hermans et al. (2018b) have derived closed-form solutions for AR(1) model parameters in case the cluster sizes are all equal. They presented fast and stable performance of such solutions compared to existing iterative methods. Furthermore, they have proposed a sample-splitting solution to deal with clusters of unequal sizes for the case of AR(1) data. That would extend the use of the derived closed-form solutions in the case of unequally sized clusters.

Simulations I

A first simulation study is conducted to illustrate the FIL property for CS data. To this end, CS clusters are generated. Consider c_k clusters of unique sizes n_k for $k = 1, \dots, 6$. The simulation settings are:

- $\mu = 0$, $\tau = 5$ and $\sigma^2 \in \{20, 5, 1.25\}$ to produce $\rho \in \{0.2, 0.5, 0.8\}$
- $n_k \in \{500, 600, 700, 800, 900, 1000\}$, and $c_k \in \{100, 100, 100, 100, 100\}$.
- $n_f = \{5, 10, 50\}$.

A set of data is generated 50 times for each setting. Parameters are estimated for the full data using the MIXED procedure in SAS 9.4 for Windows. A sub-sample of size $n_f \in \{5, 10, 50\}$ is taken and the parameter μ and its variance estimated using balanced-data closed forms (Molenberghs et al., 2011). The ARE's are computed by comparing the variance using a sub-sample of size n_f with the entire dataset.

Figure 5.2 shows the results for $n_f = \{5, 10, 50\}$ and $\rho = \{0.2, 0.5, 0.8\}$. Clearly, for $\rho = 0.2$, a very high efficiency is reached using the sub-samples of size $n_f = 50$, which gets even better for the higher correlations: indeed, when $\rho = 0.5$, one can suffice with $n_f = 10$, while for $\rho = 0.8$, a sub-sample of size $n_f = 5$ leads to almost full efficiency. In other words, even for a correlation as small as $\rho = 0.2$, analyzing only 6% of the data produces almost the same efficiency as using the entire dataset. When the correlation becomes as high as $\rho = 0.8$, this proportion decreases to

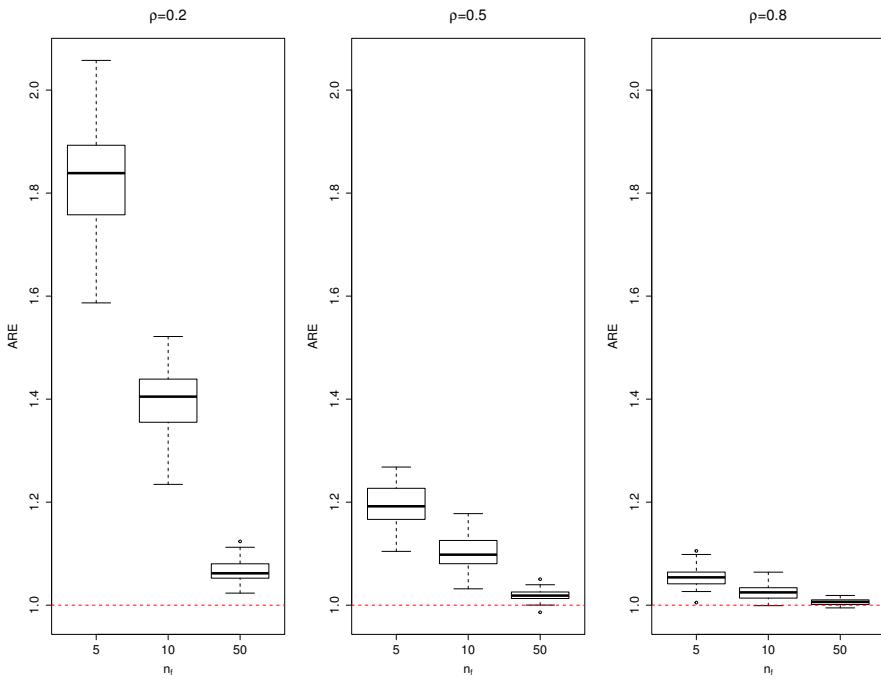


Figure 5.2: Comparing the ARE of full data with sub-samples of sizes $n_f = \{5, 10, 50\}$ for $\rho = \{0.2, 0.5, 0.8\}$. The dashed horizontal line shows $ARE = 1$.

as little as 0.6%.

Using such a (tiny) sub-sample has two main advantages. First, the computation time drops substantially. This can be seen from Table 5.2. On the other hand, this sub-sample can be chosen with all cluster sizes constant, which further enables the use of closed-forms (Hermans et al., 2018a), further reducing computation time and avoiding any convergence issues. Thus, sacrificing a tiny bit of efficiency can be considered a good bargain.

5.2.4 Extensions

From Sections 5.2.2 and 5.2.3, the advantages of FIL are clear. When CS is known to be true or assumed, sub-sampling can be used, unlike in the AR(1) case. But the question that remains is how to determine the sub-sampling size, n_f .

For the CS case, by pre-specifying the ARE rate, $1 + \varepsilon$, one may use (5.9) to determine the needed cluster size to achieve the desired level of efficiency comparing with a cluster of infinite size. Of course, the formula in (5.9) involves unknown parameters. In practice, one would take a small manageable sub-sample from the data (e.g., $n_f = 5$) to estimate the unknown parameters. To consider the extra uncertainty introduced into this estimator via replacing parameters with their estimates, a confidence interval can be constructed for n_f and its upper-bound can be used, to be on the safe side. As (5.9) involves the ratio of two random variables (as the parameters are replaced by their estimators), Fieller's method (Fieller, 1954) or the Delta method can be used to find such a confidence interval. Details of calculating such intervals will be provided in Appendix A.12.

While for a FIL estimator taking only one sub-sample can provide the desired efficiency compared with using the full sample, when computational power available, it worth to consider taking more sub-samples of smaller sizes. Assume a single cluster of size N with multivariate normal distribution and CS structure for its covariance matrix. Suppose

we take M_0 sub-samples of size n_0 from this cluster, we have derived:

$$\text{ARE} = \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{N}{n_0} \frac{1 + (n_0 - 1)\rho}{1 + (N - 1)\rho}. \quad (5.15)$$

For example, for sufficiently large N , $M_0 = 2$, $\rho = 0.5$, and efficiency equal to $5/4$ one may derive $n_f = 2$, i.e., taking only two sub-samples of size 2 would produce such efficient estimators. The ARE's in (5.8) and (5.15) are derived in Appendix A.13.

As stated earlier, a CS covariance structure is an important example of FIL estimators, while AR(1) is an important counterexample. The next question that needs to be addressed is how to examine, in general terms, whether the model at hand actually allows for a FIL estimator.

A priori, variance-covariance structures purely induced by serial or spatial processes would not be good FIL candidates, while structures induced at least in part by random effects might offer more hope. Still, the above is intuitive only and thus there is the need for a tool to detect this property in cases where the analyst is not sure. Of course, the ‘ideal’ but impractical solution is to analyze the full dataset as well as a small subset of it and to compare the results. While useless as such, it points to an alternative strategy. Because of the very information limit, it is not necessary to compare the use of subsets of size n_f to the full dataset, but rather to a subset of clusters of a larger size, but still smaller than the actual cluster sizes.

Using the same data setting as before, the following algorithm can be

executed:

Step 1. Determine n_{f_ℓ} for $\ell = 1, \dots, L$ such that $n_{f_1} < n_{f_2} < \dots < n_{f_L} \ll \min_k\{n_k\}$.

Step 2. For given ℓ , take M random sub-samples of size n_{f_ℓ} and compute $\widehat{\mu}_{\ell m}$ and its variance $\text{Var}(\widehat{\mu}_{\ell m})$ for $m = 1, \dots, M$. Combine $\text{Var}(\widehat{\mu}_{\ell m})$ ($m = 1, \dots, M$) to obtain $\widetilde{\text{Var}}(\widehat{\mu}_{n_{f_\ell}})$ using the combination rules (5.16), (5.17), and (5.18). Repeat this step for $\ell = 1, \dots, L$.

Step 3. If there exists an ℓ such that $\frac{\widetilde{\text{Var}}(\widehat{\mu}_{n_{f_\ell}})}{\widetilde{\text{Var}}(\widehat{\mu}_{n_{f_L}})} < 1 + \varepsilon$, for a pre-specified ε , then the estimator under investigation can be taken to have the FIL property.

Step 4. In case FIL is concluded in Step 3, the final estimate can be computed using $\bar{\mu} = \sum_{\ell=1}^L w_\ell \widetilde{\mu}_\ell$ and $\text{Var}(\bar{\mu}) = \sum_{\ell=1}^L w_\ell \widetilde{\text{Var}}(\widetilde{\mu}_\ell)$, where $w_\ell = \frac{n_{f_\ell}}{\sum_{\ell=1}^L n_{f_\ell}}$.

Several remarks are worth making. First, $L = 2$ might be enough, but depending on the size of the dataset and the computational power available, one can use more than two n_f to reach better estimators. While usually a very small L is sufficient, this parameter can also be gauged empirically, through similar studies. In other words, this implies that experience will grow through sequences of similar data analyses. Second, the sub-sampling can be done only once for each n_{f_ℓ} , i.e., $M = 1$, whence no combination rules are needed. Third, generating and analyzing the samples for each (ℓ, m) pair is an array of independent tasks; doing them

in parallel is straightforward. Fourth, the sub-sampling can be done more efficiently by splitting the data based on the cluster sizes. Fifth, note that not being FIL does not merely follow from not being able to find an ℓ that satisfies the condition in Step 3.

The combination rules in Step 2 are based on the so-called multiple outputation idea (Hoffman et al., 2001; Follmann et al., 2003). Let us briefly sketch the method. Consider M sub-samples of size n_s , sampled with replacement. Suppose $\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m$ as the estimated parameter in the m -th sub-sample with $\hat{\Sigma}_m$ as its covariance. The combined estimate $\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$ and its variance can be computed using the following combination rule:

$$\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}} = \frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^M \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m, \quad (5.16)$$

and its covariance is computed as,

$$\tilde{\Sigma} = \frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^M \hat{\Sigma}_m - \frac{M-1}{M} S_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^2, \quad (5.17)$$

where,

$$S_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^2 = \frac{1}{M-1} \sum_{m=1}^M (\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m - \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}})(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m - \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}})'. \quad (5.18)$$

Simulations II

To study the performance of the proposed procedure in Section 5.2.4 the simulation study in Subsection 5.2.3 is extended by repeating the

sub-sampling $M = 1, 3, 5$ times. Again, a set of data is generated 50 times for each $\rho \in \{0.2, 0.5, 0.8\}$ and then the parameter μ and its variance are estimated for the full data using the MIXED procedure in SAS 9.4 for Windows. A sub-sample of size $n_f \in \{5, 10, 50\}$ is taken $M \in \{1, 3, 5\}$ times. Estimation of μ and its variance is done in the same ways as in the first simulation. Two ARE's are computed. First, the variance of each sub-sample (for different combinations of n_f and M) is compared with the one from the full data. Second, to study the performance of the detection method in Section 5.2.4, the variance of each sub-sample, except the largest one ($n_f = 50, M = 5$) is compared with the variance of the largest sub-sample. Note that the negative ARE in some cases where $M > 1$ occurs because of negative variance estimates using the correction in (5.17). This matter is well-known (Follmann et al., 2003) and can be avoided by increasing M or simply use $M = 1$ with sufficiently large n_f .

Figure 5.3 shows the results for $\rho = 0.2$. As one may see in this case using $n_f = 5$ is not as efficient as expected. While $n_f = 10$ could be accepted, $n_f = 50$ (6.68% of data) provides almost fully efficient results. Looking at Figure 5.4 for $\rho = 0.5$ establishes that using only $n_f = 10$ (1.33% of data) could provide almost fully efficient results. When it comes to $\rho = 0.8$ in Figure 5.5, even using $n_f = 5$ (0.67% of data) is almost fully efficient.

Another interesting observation from Figures 5.3, 5.4, and 5.5 is that the proposed procedure in Section 5.2.4, i.e., comparing the efficiency

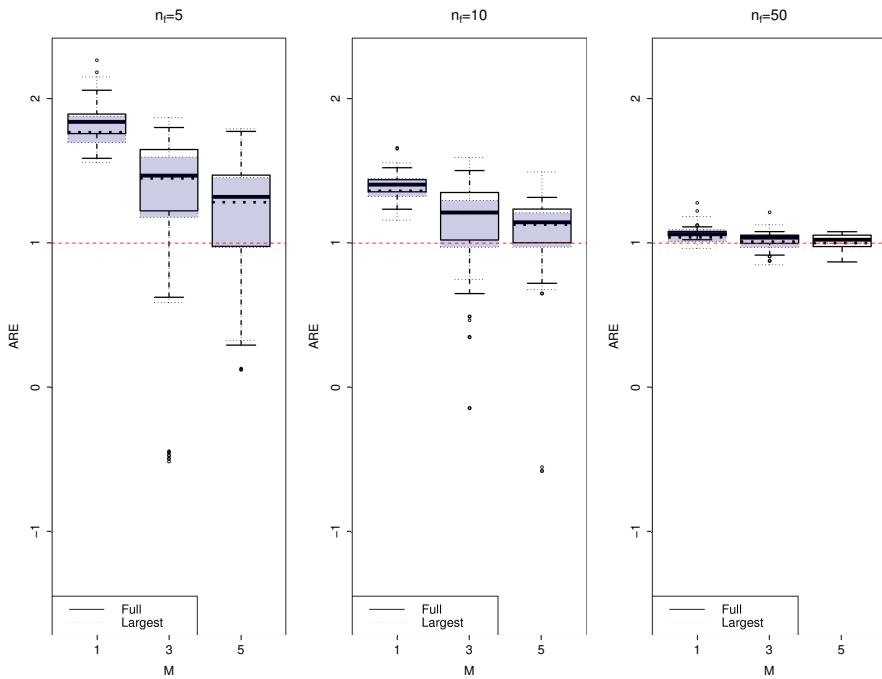


Figure 5.3: Comparing the ARE of full data (the boxplot with background color and solid lines) and sub-sampling of size $n_f = 50$, $M = 5$ times (the box plots with transparent color and dotted lines) with different combinations of n_f and M for $\rho = 0.2$. The dashed horizontal line shows $ARE = 1$.

with a sufficiently large n_f , provides results that are in line with the results when the comparison is done with the full data. This provides evidence that this procedure can be trusted to detect the FIL. Table 5.2 shows the computation time using only a tiny sub-sample for different combinations of n_f and M , next to the time for analyzing the full data. As one may see, depending on the selected n_f and M the computation could become between 500 to 1700 times faster. We may remark that

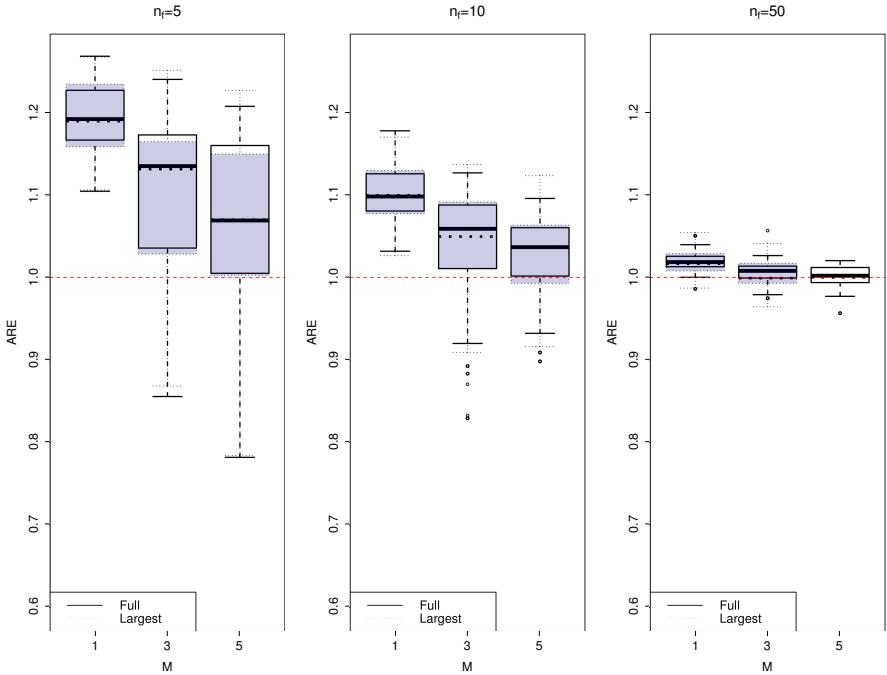


Figure 5.4: Comparing the ARE of full data (the boxplot with background color and solid lines) and sub-sampling of size $n_f = 50$, $M = 5$ times (the box plots with transparent color and dotted lines) with different combinations of n_f and M for $\rho = 0.5$. The dashed horizontal line shows $ARE = 1$.

all the computations are done on a single core in a laptop. Of course, distributing the embarrassingly parallel nature of this methodology among different machines could possibly boost the computation more than this. Finally, as the FIL is detected using $\rho = 0.2, 0.5, 0.8$, following Step 4 in the FIL detection procedure, one can improve the estimation by combining the results from $M = 1, 3, 5$ using weights proportional to the corresponding n_f . Figure 5.6 shows the results of ARE's after

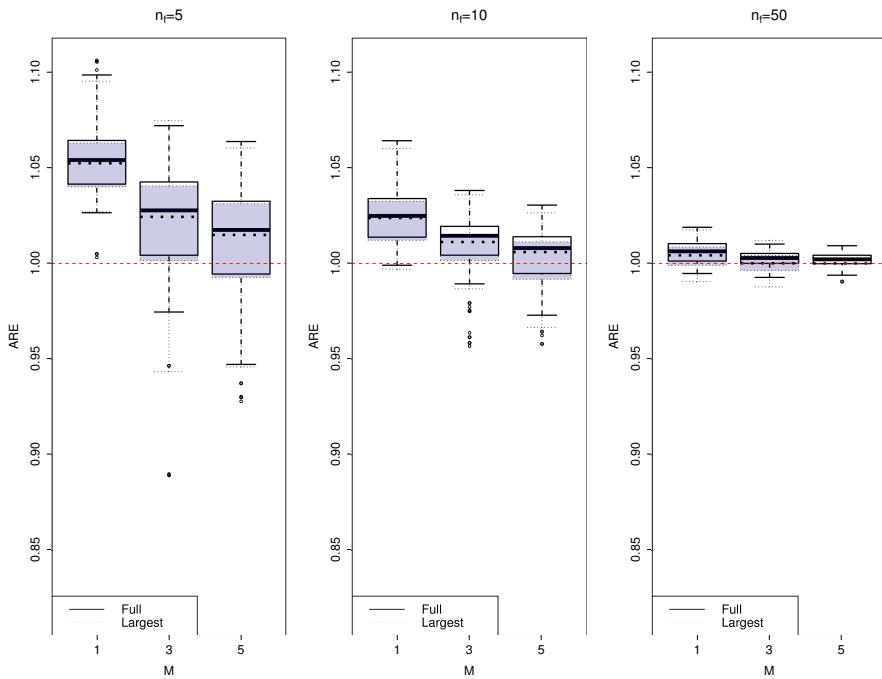


Figure 5.5: Comparing the ARE of full data (the boxplot with background color and solid lines) and sub-sampling of size $n_f = 50$, $M = 5$ times (the box plots with transparent color and dotted lines) with different combinations of n_f and M for $\rho = 0.8$. The dashed horizontal line shows $ARE = 1$.

taking the weighted average. A further ARE improvement is observed, compared with Figure 5.2, where for $\rho = 0.2$ the upper bound of the ARE is around 2, while after combining the multiple sub-samples, it decreases to around 1.2; the corresponding decrease for $\rho = 0.5$ is from 1.25 to 1.06, and still for $\rho = 0.9$, from 1.10 to 1.02.

Table 5.2: Computation time (in seconds) for different combinations of n_f and M and the full data. The results from different ρ 's are aggregated for each combination of n_f and M .

M	n_f	Computation time	
		Mean	SD
1	5	0.704	0.059
	10	0.671	0.034
	50	0.710	0.043
	5	1.171	0.058
	10	1.158	0.056
	50	1.311	0.066
3	5	1.613	0.075
	10	1.638	0.089
	50	1.981	0.094
	Full sample	1133.973	153.387

5.2.5 Case study: amazon.com book ratings

The effectiveness of detecting FIL is examined via simulations in Sections 5.2.3 and 5.2.4. In this section, we consider the ratings of the books on the Amazon website. The data are obtained from McAuley (2016). The dataset contains 2,330,066 books, which are rated at least 1 and at most 21,398 times. Obviously, this is an example of clustered data, as the same book is rated many times. Figure 5.7 shows the histogram of the number of all and unique cluster sizes.

Fitting the CS model to the full data is not feasible; attempting it in Proc MIXED in SAS would lead to the same error as in the Table 5.1. Therefore, detecting FIL and applying it would make it possible to fit a model to this data. As a CS model is used, following the discussions in

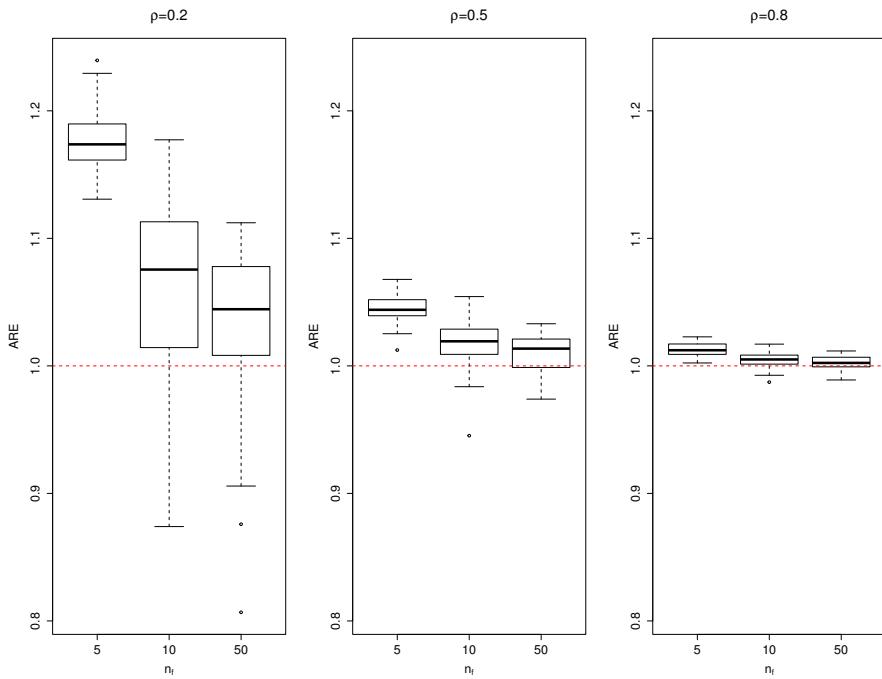


Figure 5.6: Comparing the ARE of full data with sub-samples of sizes $n_f = 5, 10, 50$ when the results from $M = 1, 3, 5$ are combined using the weights $w_i = (5/65, 10/65, 50/65)$.

Section 5.2.4, one may use Fieller's upper-bound of (5.9) to determine the sub-sampling size for a pre-specified ε . To estimate the parameters, a sub-sample of size $n_1 = 5$ is used. Figure 5.8 shows the estimated Fieller's upper-bound for n_f for several ε 's using $\alpha = 0.05$. As one may see, $\varepsilon \approx 0.09$ can be obtained by a sub-sample of size almost 50. In order to make sure whether $n_f = 50$ is good enough, a sub-sample of size $n_f = 100$ is also taken for the sake of comparison.

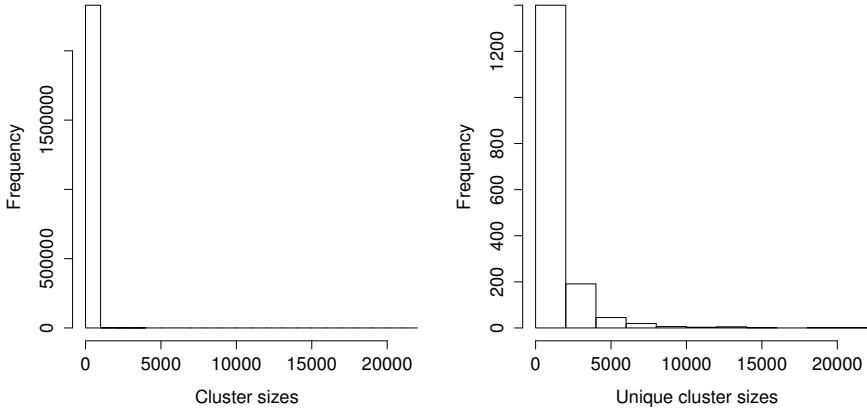


Figure 5.7: Histogram of number of all (left) and unique (right) cluster sizes in Amazon books ratings data.

The results of model fitting using $n_f = 5, 50$, and 100 are given in Table 5.3. As one may see for estimating μ , the efficiency using $n_f = 50$ comparing with $n_f = 100$ does not change substantially (efficiency is equal to 0.99699). Therefore, one may conclude the FIL property applies and using a sub-set of size $n_f = 50$ or 100 one may be almost as efficient as using the full data. So, while fitting the model to the full data is not feasible, we could obtain almost fully efficient estimates using only a sub-set of the data.

As one may see in Table 5.3, $\hat{\rho} = 0.17$ and is significant. Another interesting point about these results is that the average rating is estimated

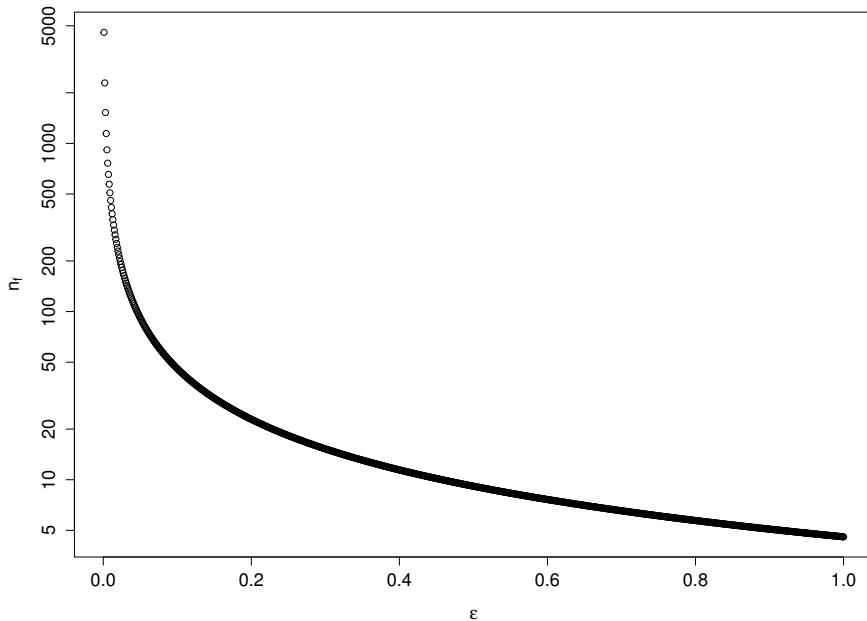


Figure 5.8: Amazon books ratings data. Fieller's upper-bound of n_f (log-scale) for different values of ϵ using $\alpha = 0.05$. The parameters are estimated using a sub-sample of size $n_1 = 5$.

as 4.3. Taking this into account that the maximum possible rating is 5, this shows those people who like a book tend to rate it. That would lead to an important conclusion: no matter how large the data set is, an inappropriate model may lead to biased estimates, i.e., the majority of the respondents are among the people who have liked the book, so it would not be a representative sample. This matter needs to be foreseen in the model.

Table 5.3: Estimating parameter vector (μ, τ, σ^2) and its standard error using $n_f = 5, 50, 100$.

n_f	μ		τ		σ^2	
	Estimate	StdErr	Estimate	StdErr	Estimate	StdErr
5	4.30390	0.00053	0.22737	0.00061	1.03355	0.00069
50	4.30505	0.00048	0.21496	0.00046	1.03127	0.00040
100	4.30500	0.00048	0.21435	0.00046	1.03285	0.00037

It is worth noting that, as in any model, some assumptions are made here. The two main assumptions considered in this section are normality of the ratings and the CS structure for their covariance matrix. We admit that extensions would be needed for other classes of models, but normality is not crucial for the current setting, as inferences are robust with respect to deviations from normality, especially in the linear model. The CS structure assumption states that two observations can be exchanged, i.e., that observers have similar characteristics. If not, extensions with covariates might be of interest (to correct for such differences), or one may consider separate analyses for different groups of observers.

5.2.6 Conclusion

Inspired by compound-symmetry models for clustered data, the finite information limit (FIL) property for estimators based on hierarchical data is proposed and investigated both theoretically and via simulations. Loosely speaking, FIL means that for increasing cluster sizes, the amount of information is bounded from above. This implies that, after some point, adding new measurements would not substantially add to

the information provided by the data, hence the efficiency would not importantly increase further. A consequence of this property is that analyzing a small, or sometimes even tiny, fraction of a dataset with FIL property (e.g., 1%–2%) would produce results almost as efficient as using the entire dataset, see Figures 5.2–5.6. This property is investigated from a theoretical point of view and a simple procedure is proposed to detect the property in a dataset. This is not needed if simple models known to have the FIL property, such as CS, are used. However, with complex variance-covariance structures, such an empirical check can be handy. The proposed procedure together with the FIL itself were investigated in simulation studies. Furthermore, an efficient sub-sampling procedure is implemented in R and available in the R package `miscVSS`, see Section 8.3.

Investigating the FIL property on the Amazon.com book ratings enabled us to fit a model which was not feasible for the full data. Based on the obtained results, the efficiency loss was not substantial neither. Such examples would show the importance of properties like FIL to deal with large clustered data, specially when an analysis is needed on a daily basis.

The computation time gain can be enormous, see Table 5.2. To add to the computational efficiency, unlike in many raw datasets, the sub-sample may be chosen balanced, which adds to the computational efficiency (Hermans et al., 2018a)). As proposed in Section 5.2.4, the sub-sampling can be repeated several times to increase efficiency. In

addition to the advantages mentioned, the proposed procedure based on the sub-sampling of various sizes several times consists of so-called "embarrassingly parallel steps." Therefore, it can be implemented as fast as the computational resources allow. Even on a single core laptop scale, the computation gain could become 1500 times faster than using the full data. One may note that fitting the model to the full (unbalanced) data is usually and out of necessity done using iterative algorithms, which are very complex to make parallel.

CHAPTER 6

STRUCTURED VERTICAL SPLITTING

In this chapter we review the structured vertical splitting with its application in pairwise modeling of several responses simultaneously.

6.1 Fast precision estimation in high-dimensional multivariate joint models

6.1.1 Introduction

There are different approaches to deal with modelling multivariate clustered data. Authors like Pawitan and Self (1993) proposed to analyze each response conditioned on all the others. As an alternative, one may specify a marginal model for each response separately and then join

them using an appropriate way. Among such ways are using a latent variable (Catalano and Ryan, 1992), copulas (Nelsen, 2007), or random effects (Laird et al., 1982). The latter is of interest in this short note.

Let y_{rij} be the j th measurement taken on the i th cluster for the r th outcome, $i = 1, \dots, N$, $r = 1, \dots, m$ and $j = 1, \dots, n_{ri}$. Obviously, the number of measurements available for subject i is $\sum_{r=1}^m n_{ri}$. Note that the various outcomes do not need to be of the same kind (continuous, binary, count data, etc.). Also there is no need to have sequences of the same length for each cluster or each outcome. Let \mathbf{Y}_{ri} be the n_{ri} measurements taken on cluster i for outcome r . The model assumes that each \mathbf{Y}_{ij} satisfies a mixed model:

$$\mathbf{Y}_{ri} = \boldsymbol{\mu}_{ri} + \boldsymbol{\epsilon}_{ri}, \quad (6.1)$$

where

$$\boldsymbol{\mu}_{ri} = \mathbf{h}(X_{ri}\boldsymbol{\beta}_r + Z_{ri}\mathbf{b}_{ri}). \quad (6.2)$$

As one may see in (6.2), each outcome can have its own set of fixed effects. In order to capture the associations between different responses, the mixed model approach for joint modelling of the m outcomes allows for correlation between the random effects of each outcome. Let $\mathbf{b}_i =$

$(\mathbf{b}_{1i}, \dots, \mathbf{b}_{mi})'$; the joint model assumes:

$$\mathbf{b}_i = \begin{bmatrix} b_{1i} \\ b_{2i} \\ \vdots \\ b_{mi} \end{bmatrix} \sim N \left(\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ \vdots \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, D = \begin{bmatrix} D_{11} & D_{12} & \dots & D_{1m} \\ D_{21} & D_{22} & \dots & D_{2r} \\ \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ D_{m1} & D_{r2} & \dots & D_{mm} \end{bmatrix} \right). \quad (6.3)$$

The matrix D_{rs} ($r, s = 1, \dots, m$) represents the covariance between \mathbf{b}_{ri} and \mathbf{b}_{si} .

While using the joint modelling approach for the multivariate clustered data is a flexible methodology, it can easily become intractable when the number of outcomes becomes large. As the matrix D contains the association between all outcome sequences, its dimension can quickly grow large. Therefore, it is easily possible that such a flexible joint model cannot be used in practice.

In order to overcome this drawback, Fieuws and Verbeke (2006) and Fieuws et al. (2007) proposed a pseudo-likelihood based approach which considers all possible pairs (or higher order subsets) of the r outcomes and fit them separately. Obviously, using this methodology some parameters are estimated more than once. Averaging multiply estimated parameters gives a final estimate for each parameter. To find a correct estimate of the variance, Fieuws and Verbeke (2006) and Fieuws et al. (2007) proposed a sandwich-type correction of the form $J^{-1}KJ^{-1}$, where J and K are formed based on cluster-wise Hessians and gradients of the log-pseudo-likelihood function, respectively.

The need for cluster-wise derivatives of the first and second order makes computing this sandwich estimator difficult and possibly expensive. Fieuws (2006b) and Kundu (2011) provided **SAS** implementations for the case of linear mixed models. Also, Fieuws (2006a) considered the case of generalized linear models using **Proc NLMIXED** in **SAS**. However, the cluster-wise calculation can become very expensive for large samples. Also, the focus of these implementations is on the fixed effects only. Implementing the variance estimation for, e.g., matrix D (6.3) is far more complicated. Also, obtaining the right precision quantities in commonly available software like **R** demands new implementations. Furthermore, a different model needs its own implementation which includes evaluating gradients and Hessians of the log-(pseudo-)likelihood function.

Hoffman et al. (2001) proposed within-cluster re-sampling to analyze clustered data when the intra-class correlation is considered a nuisance. Their idea was explored in Follmann et al. (2003) who gave it the name multiple outputation (MO). MO consists of repeatedly taking sub-samples of size 1 from each cluster to form a sub-sample of independent observations, to then apply the standard methodologies for such data. The estimated parameters and their precisions from several sub-samples will be combined using appropriate rules. Hoffman et al. (2001) have shown that their variance estimator is consistent.

Note that using pairs of variables instead of analyzing them jointly is a trick which is not restricted to likelihood-based methods. It has been used in different contexts. For example, Aas et al. (2009) have used

pair-copulas to model complex multivariate dependencies. Especially with Gaussian outcomes, pairwise approaches (e.g., vine copulas) allow retrieval of the full multivariate association structure, without the need for full joint modelling.

In this short note we extend the idea of MO to compute the variance of a pairwise-fitted multivariate joint model as a faster and easier way. The MO-based correction for the variance will be presented in Section 6.1.2. A simulation study will compare its performance with a sandwich correction in Section 6.1.3. The two corrections are compared in analyzing a real dataset in Section 6.1.4, and finally the paper is concluded in Section 6.1.5.

6.1.2 A fast variance estimator based on multiple output

tation

Consider $y_{rij}^{(s)}$ as the j th measurement on i th cluster for r th outcome in the s th sub-sample, where $s = 1, \dots, M$, $j = 1, \dots, n_{ri}$, $i \in \{1, \dots, N\}$, and $r \in \{1, \dots, m\}$. Also consider $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(s)}$ a vector of size p_s ($s = 1, \dots, M$), containing parameters estimated using the variables involved in the s th sub-sample, obviously, $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(s)} \subseteq \boldsymbol{\theta}$. Let $\boldsymbol{\Theta}' = (\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(1)}, \dots, \boldsymbol{\theta}^{(M)})$ the stacked vector combining all parameters estimated in different sub-samples. $\hat{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}$ replaces each $\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(s)}$ by its estimate. Also, $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}$ is a vector of length $\sum_{s=1}^M \times p_s$, with its elements the variance of each element of $\hat{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}$.

The MO in the current paper extends the one in Hoffman et al. (2001) and Follmann et al. (2003) in two main directions. First, the sub-samples

in our approach are of size larger than one. The second aspect of our proposed extension of MO concerns the sub-sampling scheme. The MO in the sense of Hoffman et al. (2001) and Follmann et al. (2003) takes random sub-samples of size 1 from each cluster many times to form sub-samples of independent observations. In our approach, the sub-samples are not taken at random but based on a pre-defined structure which implies a fixed number of required sub-samples. One may note that the sub-sampling in our proposal is performed at the response level. Therefore, each subject is only used in the sub-samples that the responses presented there are measured for it.

For example, using a pairwise approach, each sub-sample consists of all the observations available for each subject corresponding to the two outcomes in the pair under analysis. Therefore, having m outcomes, we need to take $M = m(m - 1)/2$ sub-samples, each with a size larger than one. Note that, in a pairwise approach, $M = m(m - 1)/2$ is the number of all possible sub-samples. Taking less sub-samples would fail to estimate some parameters. On other hand, taking more sub-samples is not possible without repeating some already taken sub-samples. As it was remarked, it is not necessary for every subject to be present in every sub-sample. In a pairwise approach, suppose we only have three responses y_1, y_2, y_3 and for a particular subject only y_1 is measured. Then this subject will only be present in pairs (y_1, y_2) and (y_1, y_3) .

As one may have already noticed, some of the parameters in $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ would have more than one counterpart in $\boldsymbol{\Theta}$. In order to bring the $\boldsymbol{\Theta}$ back

to the desired parameter space, one may take the average of possible several counterparts of each element of $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ in $\boldsymbol{\Theta}$. This can be done using an appropriate weight matrix pre-multiplied by $\boldsymbol{\Theta}$. Consider A , a $(p \times \sum_{s=1}^M p_s)$ matrix where its (ℓ, k) th element, $\ell = 1, \dots, p$, $k = 1, \dots, (p \times \sum_{s=1}^M p_s)$, is defined as follows:

$$A_{\ell,k} = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } \boldsymbol{\Theta}_k \text{ is a component of } \boldsymbol{\theta}_\ell, \\ 0 & \text{otherwise,} \end{cases} \quad (6.4)$$

where $\boldsymbol{\Theta}_k$ and $\boldsymbol{\theta}_\ell$ are the k th and ℓ th elements in $\boldsymbol{\Theta}$ and $\boldsymbol{\theta}$, respectively. If W is defined as A but with the rows divided by their sum then the combination rules for combining the estimates from M sub-samples are as follows,

$$\begin{cases} \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}} = W\hat{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}, \\ \text{diag}\{\text{Var}(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\} = W\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\boldsymbol{\Theta}} - W\text{diag}\left\{\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\Theta}} - \bar{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}\right)\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\Theta}} - \bar{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}\right)'\right\}, \end{cases} \quad (6.5)$$

where A' is the transpose of A , and $\bar{\boldsymbol{\Theta}} = \hat{\boldsymbol{\Theta}} - A'\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$. For the proof, see Hoffman et al. (2001, Appendix 2). These authors have shown that $I^{1/2}(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \boldsymbol{\theta}) \xrightarrow{d} N(0, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$, where \xrightarrow{d} means convergence in distribution and $\text{Var}(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}})$ is a consistent estimator of $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$.

We may note that the combination rules in (6.5) are only estimating the diagonal elements of the covariance matrix of $\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$. If one is interested in estimating the off-diagonal elements as well, the combination rules are the same. One would only need to construct $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{\boldsymbol{\Theta}}$, which takes into

account the off-diagonal elements also, then an appropriate W can be used to combine the estimated variances and covariances obtained from each sub-sample. The corresponding vector of unique parameters in this covariance matrix would be $p(p + 1)/2$, where each sub-sample would estimate part of them.

As one may see in (6.5), the combination rule for the variance has a subtraction, so as pointed out by both Hoffman et al. (2001) and Follmann et al. (2003), theoretically, it is possible to estimate a non-positive definite covariance matrix. Although the chance for such an occurrence is small, and we have not observed it even once in our simulations, it is still necessary to discuss this matter. We can consider three situations in which such a phenomenon would occur: (1) the sample size, N , is not sufficiently large, (2) the number of sub-samples, M , is not sufficiently large, and (3) the size of each sub-sample is not sufficiently large.

Hoffman et al. (2001) proposed to increase the number of sub-samples, M , to solve this problem. As it was pointed out, unlike the usual MO, in our approach the number of sub-samples is fixed. Therefore, in case of a non-positive definite covariance estimate, we suggest to take larger sub-samples each time. Note that taking such a strategy is not possible in the usual MO, since it takes one observation per cluster, so the sub-sampling size is fixed. Taking larger sub-samples in our case means to consider triples, quadruples, etc., instead of pairs. We expect the problem of non-positive definite covariance estimate to vanish when

taking larger sub-samples.

When maximum likelihood estimator (MLE) is used, Follmann et al. (2003) proposed a variance estimator based on MLE approximation, using first order Taylor expansion of the score function. This approach requires the evaluation of the subject-wise gradient and Hessian of the log-likelihood function, which is similar to the requirements of the sandwich estimator. Therefore, in case where even with larger sub-samples a non-positive definite covariance estimate persists, we suggest to use the sandwich estimator instead of MO.

6.1.3 Simulations

In this section the proposed idea will be explored and examined via two simulations studies. Sub-section 6.1.3 considers 1- joint modelling of linear mixed models, and 2- a joint model of ordinal data in a generalized linear mixed models context.

Gaussian responses

Consider the linear case with identity link in (6.2), as follows:

$$\mathbf{Y}_i = \mathbf{X}_i\beta + \mathbf{Z}_i\mathbf{b}_i + \epsilon_i, \quad (6.6)$$

where \mathbf{X}_i is the design matrix regarding fixed effects, β represents the fixed effects, \mathbf{Z}_i is the design matrix related to the random effects, and $\mathbf{b} \sim N(0, D)$ shows the random effects. The errors are represented by $\epsilon_i \sim N(0, R)$. In order to evaluate the proposed method in a simulation

study, consider the model in (6.6) with parameters:

$$\beta = (5, 5, 5, 5), D = \begin{pmatrix} 60 & 40 & 25 & 40 \\ & 50 & 35 & 30 \\ & & 45 & 40 \\ & & & 55 \end{pmatrix}, R = 196I_{n_i}, \quad (6.7)$$

where I_{n_i} is the identity matrix of order n_i , with n_i the length of the i -th cluster. This means that both of the X_i and Z_i are formed by columns of 1's. The data are generated from such model 100 times, each consists of 100 clusters of size $n_i = 5$. The mixed model is fitted to the full sample as well as each of the 6 pairs using Proc MIXED in **SAS**. Then, the estimates and variances are combined using (6.5). Also, the sandwich estimator is calculated using `%jointpair` macro in **SAS** in Fieuws (2006b).

Figure 6.1 shows the simulation results. As one may see, the relative efficiency of estimating fixed effects using sandwich and MO corrections are very similar. Furthermore, the relative efficiency for estimating parameters in the D matrix are also presented. These parameters are only estimated using the MO correction, as the implementation was not available for sandwich-correction. The interesting result here is the computation time. As one may see, using MO-correction the computation can be done more than 2500 times faster. On the other hand, in case that computing the full likelihood model is possible (as it is the case in our simulation study), MO-correction can also possibly

be computed faster than the full-likelihood. Therefore, it is not only an alternative for infeasible likelihoods, but also, it can be used to accelerate computations that are strictly speaking doable.

In order to see how our proposal performs comparing with sandwich estimator when the correlation between the random effects is small, the simulation above is repeated, but this time the off-diagonal elements of D matrix in (6.7) are divided by 10. Figure 6.2 shows the relative efficiencies of the variances obtained using MO and sandwich corrections. As one may see, these relative efficiencies are again very close to 1.

Non-Gaussian responses

In order to investigate the performance of our proposal for non-Gaussian responses and more complex models a simulation is done based on the Leuven diabetes project. This dataset is analyzed in Ivanova et al. (2017), details about this study can be found there. Here we only review parts necessary for our simulations. In order to study how well the diabetes is controlled, three outcomes were measured for each patient at baseline (T_0) and one year later (T_1). These three outcomes of interest were LDL-cholesterol (low-density lipoprotein cholesterol, mg/dl), HbA1c (glycosylated hemoglobin, %), and SBP (systolic blood pressure, mmHg). Although these three variables are continuous, the interest was in expert-specified cut-off values of these outcomes. The cut-off values are defined as $\{< 100, [100, 115), [115, 130), \geq 130\}$ (mg/dl) for LDL-cholesterol, $\{< 7, [7, 8), \geq 8\}\%$ for HbA1c, and $\{\leq$

$130, (30, 140], (140, 160], > 160\}$ mmHg for SBP.

In order to analyze these 3 ordinal outcomes together, a joint modelling approach with a proportional odds mixed model (POMM) for each response was considered in Ivanova et al. (2017). The POMM for each response is as follows:

$$\text{logit}[P(Y_{rij} < k)] = \xi_{r0k} + \xi_{r1}t_{ij} + \xi_{r2}X_i + b_{ri} + \epsilon_{rij}, \quad (6.8)$$

where $r = 1, 2, 3$ indicates the outcome of interest, and $k = 1, \dots, K - 1$ with K as the number of levels of the corresponding outcome of interest. Furthermore, X_i shows the gender of the subject, and b_{ri} 's are the random intercepts corresponding to each outcome. Following the mixed model approach for joint modelling of multiple outcomes, we assume the three random intercepts to be normally distributed with the following covariance matrix.

$$\begin{bmatrix} b_{1i} \\ b_{2i} \\ b_{3i} \end{bmatrix} \sim N \left(\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, D = \begin{bmatrix} D_{11} & D_{12} & D_{13} \\ & D_{22} & D_{23} \\ & & D_{33} \end{bmatrix} \right). \quad (6.9)$$

The parameter values for generating the data were obtained by fitting the joint model to the Leuven diabetes dataset. The data were generated 200 times using **SAS Proc IML**. Each time the parameters in the 3 pairs were estimated using adaptive Gaussian quadrature (Pinheiro and Bates, 1995) with 3 quadrature points in **SAS Proc NL MIXED** and the combined variance was estimated using sandwich and MO corrections. Considering

the complexity of the model, in order to do the simulation quicker, the codes were run on VSC cluster in Leuven, Belgium.

The results of the simulations are summarized in Table 6.1. Column 3 of Table 6.1 shows the parameter values which were used to generate the data. The last three columns show the means and standard deviations over 200 replications for estimated variance using MO, sandwich, and their relative efficiency, respectively. As one may see, for all of the variables the estimated variances are very close, therefore, one can conclude that our proposal performs well also in a complex model with non-Gaussian responses.

6.1.4 Application

To evaluate the hearing performance of a subject, hearing threshold sound pressure levels (measured in dB) are considered. By definition, a hearing threshold is the lowest signal intensity possible to perceive by a subject at a specific frequency. In a study considered in Verbeke and Molenberghs (2000) and Fieuws and Verbeke (2006), hearing threshold measured in 11 different frequencies between 125 Hz and 8000 Hz for left and right ears obtained on 603 male participants from the Baltimore Longitudinal Study of Ageing, BLSA (Shock et al., 1984). The number of visits for each subject which varies between 1 to 15 are unequally spaced. In this illustration all subjects with missing values are ignored to make a fair comparison between MO and sandwich corrections.

In order to model different frequencies simultaneously, Fieuws and

Table 6.1: Simulations (non-Gaussian outcomes). The estimated model for three ordinal outcomes. The first column indicates different outcomes, and the second column shows the estimated effect. The data obtained parameter-values which were used to generate the data are presented in column 3. Columns four and five show the average (standard deviation) of standard error using MO and sandwich, obtained over 200 replications, respectively. The last column shows the relative efficiency of MO compared to sandwich: $\text{Var}(\tilde{\theta}_{\text{MO}})/\text{Var}(\tilde{\theta}_{\text{Sandwich}})$.

Outcome	Effect	Parameter	MO	Sandiwch	ARE (MO/Sandwich)
LDL-chol.	Int. 1	$\xi_{101} = -0.740$	0.039 (0.006)	0.039 (0.006)	0.993 (0.009)
	Int. 2	$\xi_{102} = 0.480$	0.038 (0.006)	0.038 (0.006)	0.998 (0.009)
	Int. 3	$\xi_{103} = 1.580$	0.042 (0.006)	0.041 (0.007)	1.012 (0.010)
	Time	$\xi_{11} = 1.050$	0.032 (0.004)	0.032 (0.004)	1.024 (0.008)
	Gender	$\xi_{12} = 0.450$	0.048 (0.008)	0.048 (0.008)	0.989 (0.001)
	RI sd	$\sqrt{D_{11}} = 1.880$	0.036 (0.005)	0.034 (0.005)	1.105 (0.010)
	Int. 1	$\xi_{201} = 270$	0.042 (0.007)	0.042 (0.007)	0.997 (0.008)
	Int. 2	$\xi_{202} = 2.610$	0.052 (0.009)	0.051 (0.009)	1.043 (0.010)
	Time	$\xi_{21} = 1.040$	0.036 (0.004)	0.035 (0.005)	1.034 (0.010)
HbA1c	Gender	$\xi_{22} = -0.090$	0.054 (0.009)	0.054 (0.009)	0.979 (0.001)
	RI sd	$\sqrt{D_{22}} = 2.150$	0.042 (0.007)	0.040 (0.007)	1.131 (0.012)
	Int. 1	$\xi_{301} = -0.190$	0.035 (0.006)	0.035 (0.006)	0.995 (0.009)
	Int. 2	$\xi_{302} = 1.380$	0.038 (0.007)	0.038 (0.007)	1.012 (0.009)
	Int. 3	$\xi_{303} = 3.700$	0.056 (0.009)	0.055 (0.010)	1.028 (0.015)
SBP	Time	$\xi_{31} = 0.510$	0.030 (0.003)	0.030 (0.003)	1.013 (0.005)
	Gender	$\xi_{32} = 0.190$	0.044 (0.008)	0.044 (0.008)	0.991 (0.001)
	RI sd	$\sqrt{D_{32}} = 1.620$	0.034 (0.004)	0.033 (0.005)	1.073 (0.015)
	LDL-col. vs. HbA1c	Cov RI's	$D_{12} = 0.808$	0.067 (0.013)	0.068 (0.014)
LDL-col. vs. SPB	Cov RI's	$D_{13} = 1.218$	0.057 (0.012)	0.057 (0.012)	0.994 (0.015)
HbA1c vs. SBP	Cov RI's	$D_{23} = 1.393$	0.065 (0.014)	0.065 (0.014)	0.993 (0.016)

Verbeke (2006) used a joint model approach. Because of several outcomes of interest, they have proposed a pairwise approach to jointly fit the model to the data. In this section we use this dataset to illustrate our proposal and compare it with the sandwich correction proposed in Fieuws and Verbeke (2006). Consider $y_i(t)$ as the hearing threshold for subject i at time t for some frequency. The mixed model fitted to this

single response is as follows:

$$\begin{aligned} y_i(t) = & (\beta_1 + \beta_2 Age_i + \beta_3 Age_i^2 + a_i) + (\beta_4 + \beta_5 Age_i + b_i)t \\ & + \beta_6 V(t) + \epsilon_i(t), \quad (6.10) \end{aligned}$$

where t represents time and $V(t)$ is a dummy variable indicating whether the measurement is taken at the first time visit to account for systematically higher response values at the first visit. Also, Age indicates the age of the participant at first visit. Furthermore, a_i and b_i are the random intercepts and slopes, respectively; and ϵ is the error term. Using a joint modelling approach to model the hearing threshold at several frequencies one needs to let the random intercepts and slopes from various models to be jointly distributed. Here a multivariate normal distribution is considered.

For the sake of our illustration, we consider two models: once three outcomes are modelled simultaneously (frequencies 125 Hz, 250Hz, and 500 Hz for the right ear) and once 5 outcomes are considered (frequencies 125 Hz, 250 Hz, 500 Hz, 750 Hz, and 1000 Hz for the right ear). A joint model of m outcomes using (6.10) for each response will have $6m$ fixed effects to estimate, as well as $2k(2k + 1)/2$ parameters in D . For $k = 3$ this is 39 parameters (on top of the parameters in the error matrix). Taking $k = 5$ the number of parameters in fixed effects and D matrix is 85. A pairwise approach is used to estimate the parameters of such models. The precision of the parameter estimates are computed using MO and sandwich corrections. Whenever possible ($k = 3$) the model is

fitted directly using the full likelihood.

Figure 6.3 shows the ARE for estimating fixed effects using MO and the sandwich corrections. The left panel of this figure shows the results when 3 responses are modelled jointly. In this case, estimating the parameters using the full likelihood was also possible, so the ARE's are computed relative to the variance obtained from fitting the model using full likelihood. As one may see in Figure 6.3 (left), the MO correction gives slightly better results compared to the sandwich. Fitting the full likelihood to the 5-response model was not feasible. Therefore, the precision was only estimated using MO and sandwich corrections. Figure 6.3 (right) shows the ARE (MO divided by sandwich) for the 30 fixed effects of a 5-response model. As one may see, the ARE's are around 1; nevertheless, MO still gives slightly more precise estimates for most of the parameters.

While both MO and sandwich corrections give similar precision estimates, their computation time differs dramatically. Fitting a 3-response model using the full likelihood takes only 38.12 seconds. Fitting such a model with a pairwise approach (it needs fitting 3 pairs) with sandwich correction takes 2.29 hours (216.66 times more than the full likelihood) using Fieuws (2006b). The computation time using the MO correction is only 25.34 seconds (0.66 times the full likelihood computation time).

When considering 5 responses, fitting the full likelihood in `Proc MIXED` in `SAS` give `ERROR: The SAS System stopped processing this step because of insufficient memory`. Using a pairwise approach

(with 10 pairs) and sandwich correction the computation time is 7.98 hours, while the MO correction takes only 1.45 minutes which is 331.03 faster comparing with sandwich correction implemented in Fieuws (2006b).

We may note that the implementation in Fieuws (2006b) is not fully efficient. Also, as fitting different pairs is a so-called embarrassingly parallel task, using parallel computation is straightforward. So a more efficient implementation of sandwich correction will become faster (Ivanova et al., 2017, as an example). But the same discussion goes for the MO correction. Using parallel computation would also make this approach considerably faster. The interesting point is that on a single-core laptop scale, the MO correction is fast enough, also straightforward to implement, which would avoid the need of using cluster computing, difficult implementations, etc.

Note that there could be other approaches to deal with this problem. In some cases, smoothing splines have been considered in the context of mixed models. For example, Verbyla et al. (1999) and Ruppert et al. (2003) consider random smoothing splines for the random-effects structure, and couple this with efficient computation. See also Molenberghs and Verbeke (2005, pp. 381-384). Evidently, smoothing splines can also be used to specify the mean structure. Other useful tools are fractional polynomials, which can be used in the mean function, the residual variance function, etc. Examples of both of these uses can be found in Verbeke and Molenberghs (2000, pp. 478-479 and pp. 137-139,

respectively).

6.1.5 Conclusions

In this short note the idea of multiple ouputation was extended to provide a fast precision estimation in high-dimensional multivariate joint models. Such precision estimation can be used in the pairwise approach of Fieuws and Verbeke (2006); Fieuws et al. (2007) to replace the timely expensive and complicate to compute and implement sandwich estimator. While both MO and sandwich corrections give asymptotically the same precisions, the main advantages of our MO-based proposal compared with sandwich correction are as follows:

1. MO correction is considerably faster, even on a laptop scale using a single core. In our simulations (Section 6.1.3) the time gain was more than 2500 times and in real data analysis (Section 6.1.4) it was about 350 times. As our simulations and real data analysis results show, MO correction can possibly be computed even faster than the full likelihood (when feasible).
2. The MO correction can be computed using the usual outcomes of any standard software. i.e., estimates and their precision. Unlike the sandwich correction which needs the first and second order derivatives. Therefore, MO correction is straightforward to implement with no need of complicated computations in any one of the usual software packages. This property is true for fixed effects, variance components, or other types of parameters of interest.

Computing the derivatives of log-(pseudo-)likelihood function can possibly more difficult e.g. for variance components comparing with the fixed effects.

3. Using the MO correction for estimating the precision in a pairwise approach (Fieuws and Verbeke, 2006; Fieuws et al., 2007) each pair can be treated completely independent from the others. Therefore, if one cluster contains no missing values for one pair it will be used to estimate the parameters of that specific pairs. This is not true for the sandwich correction. The reason is the need to compute cluster-wise gradients and Hessians.

Considering the above advantages of MO correction over sandwich correction, it can be considered as an effective and efficient alternative for precision estimation when dealing with high-dimensional multivariate joint models.

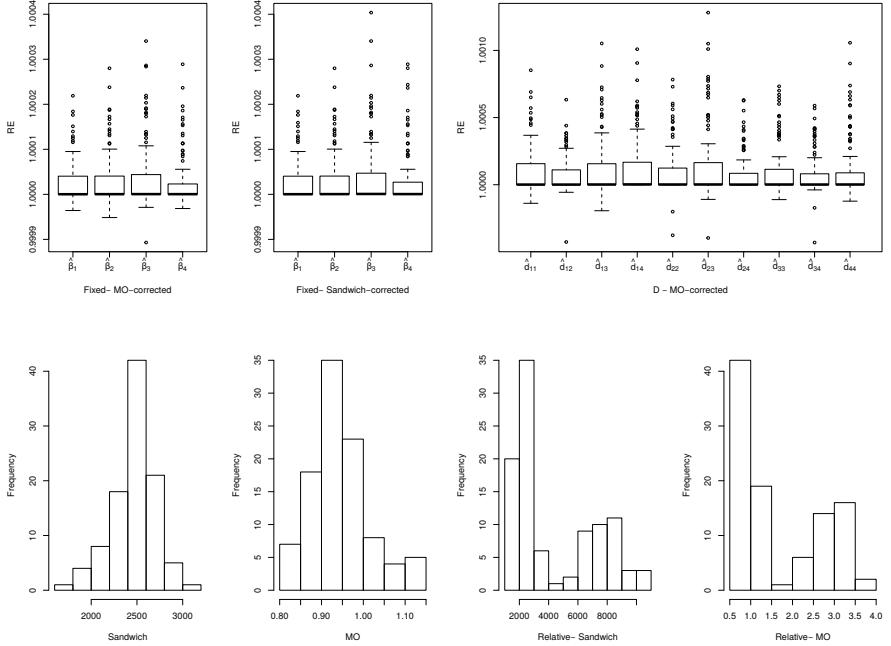


Figure 6.1: Simulations (Gaussian outcomes). Top: Relative efficiency of estimated fixed effects using MO-correction (left) and sandwich-correction (middle), estimated D -matrix using MO-correction (right) compared to the full model. The relative efficiency is defined as the ratio of the variance of the alternative method and the full likelihood, e.g., for MO $\text{Var}(\hat{\theta}_{\text{MO}})/\text{Var}(\hat{\theta}_{\text{full}})$ is computed. Bottom: Histograms of computation time (in seconds) using sandwich and MO corrections (first and second). Histograms of computation time (in seconds) using sandwich and MO corrections (third and fourth) relative to the full model computation time.

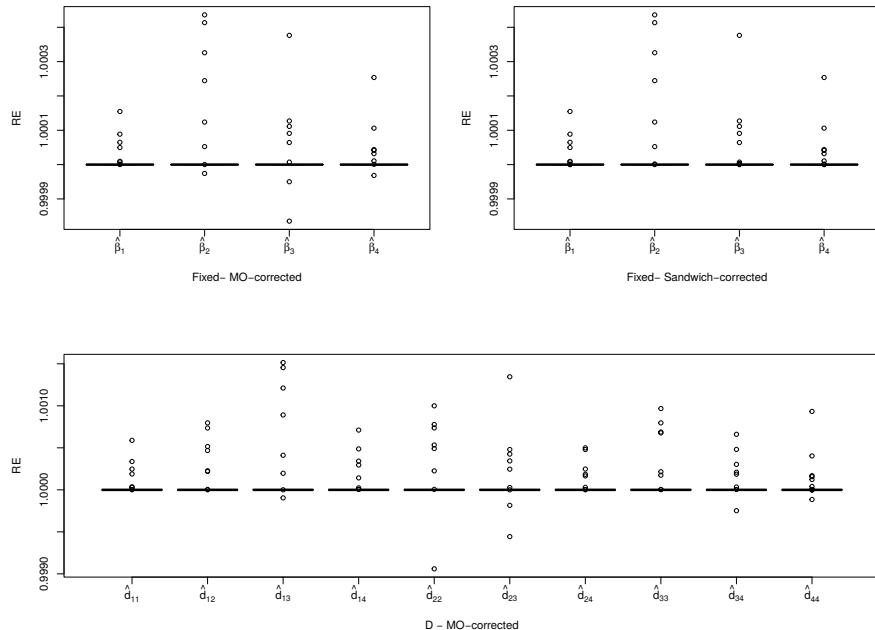


Figure 6.2: Simulations (Gaussian outcomes). Top: Relative efficiency of estimated fixed effects using MO-correction (left) and sandwich-correction (right). Bottom: estimated D -matrix using MO-correction compared to the full model. The relative efficiency is defined as the ratio of the variance of the alternative method and the full likelihood, e.g., for MO $\text{Var}(\hat{\theta}_{\text{MO}})/\text{Var}(\hat{\theta}_{\text{full}})$ is computed.

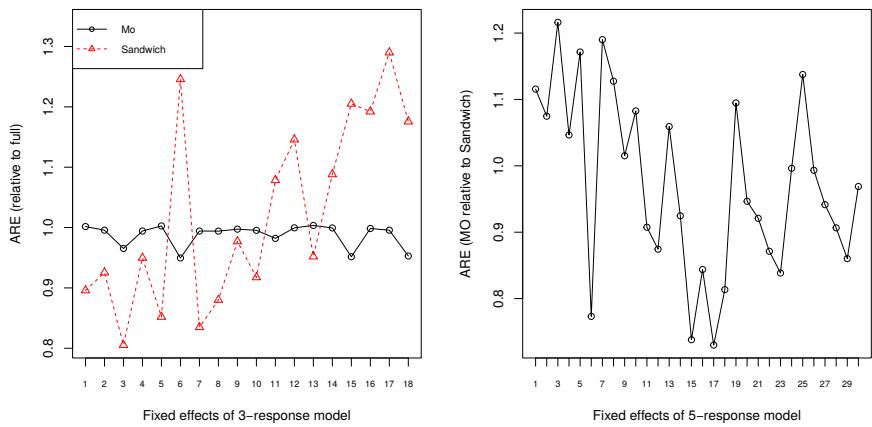


Figure 6.3: Application. Left: comparing the ARE (relative to the variance using full likelihood) of estimated fixed effects of MO and sandwich corrections in a model with three responses. Right: the $ARE = \text{Var}(\text{MO})/\text{Var}(\text{sandwich})$ of estimated fixed effects in a model with 5 responses. The x-axes show the indexes of the fixed effects (18 parameters for 3-response model and 30 parameters for 5-response model.)

CHAPTER 7

SUPPLEMENTARY TOPICS

We have discussed the several similarities of multiple imputation (Rubin, 1987; Carpenter and Kenward, 2012) and multiple outputation (Hoffman et al., 2001; Follmann et al., 2003). In this chapter, we present two of our contributions that consider determining number of imputed datasets (equivalently number of sub-samples), and performing multiple imputation (equivalently multiple outputation) in a case where the combination rule for estimates cannot be used in a direct way.

7.1 Iterative multiple imputation: a framework to determine the number of imputed datasets

7.1.1 Introduction

Since Rubin's seminal work on multiple imputation (MI) (Rubin, 1978, 1979, 1987), the method has been broadly applied, methodologically extended, and expanded towards ever more areas of application (Carpenter and Kenward, 2008; van Buuren, 2012; Carpenter and Kenward, 2012; Van der Elst et al., 2015). Multiple imputation is a commonly used approach to analyze incomplete data. A growing literature and increasing number of software implementations have contributed to the spread of the method. One of the attractions of MI is its very good to excellent performance even with a relatively small number of imputed datasets. This was important when Rubin created the method, about forty years ago, in view of, among others, the US Census. It still is today because of ever increasing data streams.

Broadly, MI replaces a missing value with several plausible values, sampled from an appropriate predictive distribution for the missing values, given observed information. The method produces several completed datasets to replace the initial partially observed dataset.

An evident practical question is how many imputed datasets, M say, are sufficient for reliable results, knowing that full efficiency would be reached

for $M = +\infty$. Precision should be balanced against computational expense. It has been stated repeatedly, and practically confirmed, that a small number of imputations oftentimes gives very acceptable results. Sources like Rubin (1987) and the classic Rubin and Little (2002) quote values as low as 2–5. While attractive, especially when faced with large and complex databases, such low numbers may not always apply. Features that would require larger numbers of imputation include: increasing amounts of missing information, and the need for hypothesis testing rather than merely parameter and precision estimation. It is reassuring that Schafer (1997) indicated that, even under undesirable circumstances, it is rare for M needing to be in excess of twenty. This observation was based on extensive simulation, rather than theory.

Some of the approaches for dealing with selecting the number of imputations are reviewed in Section 7.1.2. Our proposal to handle the choice is presented in Section 7.1.3. Section 7.1.4 reports some simulations, while real-life applications are offered in Section 7.1.5.

7.1.2 Number of imputed datasets: a review

Upon producing multiply imputed datasets, a standard analysis is routinely applied to each of the completed datasets. Let $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ be the parameter vector of interest and $\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m$ its estimate from the m th imputed dataset. If M is the number of imputed datasets, then $\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$, the multiple imputation

estimator is defined as:

$$\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}} = \frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^M \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m. \quad (7.1)$$

If $\hat{\Sigma}_m$ is the estimated variance-covariance of $\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m$, then the within-imputation variability is:

$$\hat{W} = \frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^M \hat{\Sigma}_m, \quad (7.2)$$

and the between-imputation variability is:

$$\hat{B} = \frac{1}{M-1} \sum_{m=1}^M (\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m - \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) (\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m - \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}})'. \quad (7.3)$$

Then, asymptotically, for the sample size as well as M going to infinity, we have

$$\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \sim N(\boldsymbol{\theta}, \hat{B} + \hat{W}). \quad (7.4)$$

For finite M , the variance of the normal distribution in (7.4) becomes (Rubin and Little, 2002):

$$\hat{V} = (1 + M^{-1})\hat{B} + \hat{W}. \quad (7.5)$$

The term \hat{B}/M takes into account the increased variability stemming from finite M . Obviously, for $M \rightarrow \infty$, this extra term vanishes. Consider $r = \frac{1}{q} \left(\text{tr}(\hat{B}\hat{W}^{-1}) \right) (1 + M^{-1})$ and $\nu = (M-1)(1+r^{-1})^2$ with

$\text{tr}(A)$ indicating the trace of the matrix A , and q the length of parameter vector $\boldsymbol{\theta}$. For the k th element of $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ we have:

$$\widetilde{\theta_k} \approx \theta_k + t_\nu \sqrt{\widehat{V}_{kk}}, \quad (7.6)$$

where t_ν is Student's t distribution with ν degrees-of-freedom and \widehat{V} can be computed using (7.5). These expressions are derived and discussed in detail by Rubin (1987) or Carpenter and Kenward (2012). The degrees-of-freedom ν are computed by Rubin and Schenker (1986). Small sample degrees-of-freedom are reviewed by Wagstaff et al. (2011). Note that (7.6) applies to the scalar case.

Now, if I_M is the information based on M imputations and I_∞ is the information for $M \rightarrow +\infty$, then,

$$\frac{I_M}{I_\infty} = \left(1 + \frac{\gamma}{M}\right)^{-1}, \quad \gamma = \frac{r + 2/(\nu + 3)}{r + 1}, \quad (7.7)$$

where γ in (7.7) can be regarded as the fraction of missing information. Rubin (1987) suggested that for many applications with a moderate amount of missingness, 3–5 imputations might well be sufficient. For example, using these expressions, with 10% missingness, $M = 3$ would provide about 97% efficiency when compared with an infinite number of imputed datasets. It is not surprising that this rule of thumb is relatively broadly accepted in practice. For example, according to SAS/STAT(R) 9.4 User's Guide, the default number of imputations in the MI procedure is set equal to 5.

However, in the latest version of SAS (SAS/STAT(R) 14.1) the default number of imputed datasets (`NIMPUTE`) is increased to 25. Furthermore, following White et al. (2011), an option is provided in this version of SAS' `PROC MI` to set the number of imputed datasets equal to the fraction of incomplete cases (`NIMPUTE=PCTMISSING`). This indicates a level of acceptance among commercial software developers for the need for larger M 's, also alternative procedures to determine it.

A practical difficulty with this heuristic is the need for γ . The quantity should be estimated to begin with, but obviously, the quality of this estimate is hugely affected by the number of imputed datasets itself. Furthermore, as Bodner (2008) also suggests, the rule for the number of imputed datasets would take into account three parameters: $\tilde{\theta}$, its variance, and the degrees-of-freedom of the Student's t distribution. When one is interested in controlling the p -values when conducting hypothesis tests, or other quantities, then perhaps more imputations are needed (Harel and Schafer, 2003; Carpenter and Kenward, 2008).

Carpenter and Kenward (2012) distinguished between two cases. Their proposal is to use a small number of imputed datasets when the inference is clear-cut, but if it is less clear-cut and an accurate estimate of the p -value or γ is needed, they proposed to set $M = 100$.

Given that for small M , the approximation in (7.6) may not be accurate enough, Royston (2004) proposed an iterative procedure to select M such that the confidence level remains at a selected level. He proposed to select M such that the coefficient of variation of $t_{\nu} \sqrt{\widehat{V}_{kk}}$ for the

worst-case parameter becomes less than the type I error rate α ; this author used the conventional $\alpha = 0.05$.

Graham et al. (2007) have performed a simulation study to investigate the effect of M on various characteristics, such as power, mean squared error, fraction of missingness, etc. Bodner (2008) explored various factors that are affected by increasing M . His findings were used in Lu (2014) who considered the case of longitudinal data and then focused on determining M to stabilize MI-based inferences. Stability in these articles is defined in terms of four conditions regarding the conditional standard errors of the MI estimator, the test statistics, the missingness fraction, as well as the coefficient of variation of the half confidence interval. Under some circumstances, these authors proposed to use as many as 200 imputed datasets.

Royston et al. (2009) proposed a jackknife procedure (Efron, 1981) to estimate $\sqrt{B/M}$, the so-called Monte Carlo error. These authors then propose to select the sufficient number of imputed datasets based on achieving a pre-defined level of precision. Their approach is implemented in the command `mim` in STATA.

7.1.3 Number of imputed datasets: an alternative proposal

As we have seen, in most of the proposed rules for choosing M , the comparison is always between characteristics under a given, finite M on the one hand, and $M \rightarrow +\infty$ on the other. In contrast, our proposal

is to compare the quantity of interest with its successor (i.e., under M versus $M + 1$). As the estimated parameter and its variance using MI will converge to some asymptotic values as $M \rightarrow \infty$, monitoring this convergence is insightful. This implies an iterative perspective, which is convenient for practice. We call this procedure the iterative multiple imputation (imi). The imi procedure is formulated as follows:

1. **Start.** Select an initial number of imputed datasets, M_0 , $\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{M_0} = \sum_{i=1}^{M_0} \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_i / M_0$.

2. **Update.** For $m > M_0$,

$$\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} = \frac{m\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m + \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}}{m + 1}. \quad (7.8)$$

3. **Distance.** Compute: $d_{m+1} = d(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}, \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m)$ using an appropriate distance.
4. **Stopping rule.** $d_j < \varepsilon$ for $j = m + 1, \dots, m + k_0$.

Here, M_0 is an integer indicating the initial number of imputations. For $M_0 = 2$, the stopping rule will be examined from the beginning, but in situations where the user knows a minimum number of imputations are needed (based on proportion of missing data, etc.) a larger M_0 can be used. $\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m$ is the estimated parameter in the m -th iteration and $\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m = \sum_{i=1}^M \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_i / M$. Note that $\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$ can be replaced with other quantities of interest, e.g., p -values. Clearly, for various quantities of interest, the corresponding combination rule should be applied in (7.8). Since the

convergence of this procedure is not monotone, one needs to determine an integer k_0 as the number of successive steps that the stopping rule should be validated. This would prevent an early declaration of convergence. Again, $k_0 = 1$ would stop the first time this criterion is met, but a larger k_0 is recommended. Our proposal is to use $k_0 = 3$ (see Sections 7.1.4 and 7.1.6).

As can be seen, the number of imputed datasets in the proposed iterative procedure has two components: a deterministic part: $M_0 + k_0$ and a stochastic part which is determined by the iterations. Our implementation of this procedure in R package `imi` makes it possible to determine these two parameters interactively after observing the computation time of imputing the dataset and fit the model for $M_0 = 2$ times.

According to the convergence rate of the multivariate central limit theorem (Gotze, 1991; Berckmoes et al., 2016), roughly speaking, the convergence of $\tilde{\theta}$ to θ as $M \rightarrow \infty$ in (7.4) depends on 3 different aspects: sample size, dimension of the random vector (parameter space), and the third moment of the components of the random vector. In our iterative procedure, the sample size consists of two aspects: the number of imputed datasets, M , also the proportion of missing data. A larger M makes the convergence faster, while a larger proportion of missing data makes it slower. On the other hand, another important issue is the dimension of the parameter space, the more parameters to estimate the more slowly the convergence will be achieved. The third moment highlights the role of the model, for example, the convergence

for a linear model would be different from a logistic regression (see Section 7.1.4). Therefore, an appropriate method for determining M should consider all these aspects. In other words, it should be sensitive to changes in any of these factors. As our proposed method uses the goal of the analyses (parameter estimate, hypothesis testing, etc.) in the process of determining M , it includes such aspects. Simulation results in Section 7.1.4 support this claim as well.

One important aspect of the proposed iterative procedure is the choice of an appropriate distance in Step 3. One immediate choice is to use an Euclidean distance, as follows:

$$d_{m+1}^{\text{Euc}} = \sqrt{(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} - \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m)^T (\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} - \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m)}. \quad (7.9)$$

Alternatively, one may try to make the largest difference smaller, then an ℓ_∞ -norm would be the appropriate distance. Obviously, for $q = 1$ these two are equivalent:

$$d_{m+1}^{\ell_\infty} = \max \left\{ |\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} - \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m| \right\}. \quad (7.10)$$

The common problem with ℓ_p -norm type distance measures in (7.9)–(7.10) is the fact that they would emphasize the elements in the parameter vector which have larger magnitude. Also, they are not robust against changes in units. This can also be seen from the general definition of

the ℓ_p -norm of a vector $\mathbf{x} = (x_1, \dots, x_k)$, $\|\mathbf{x}\|_p$:

$$\|\mathbf{x}\|_p = (|x_1|^p + \dots + |x_k|^p)^{1/p}, p \leq 1.$$

When $p \rightarrow \infty$, one can show:

$$\|\mathbf{x}\|_\infty = \max\{|x_1|, \dots, |x_k|\}.$$

As an alternative, we propose using the Mahalanobis distance (Mahalanobis, 1936):

$$d_{m+1}^{\text{Mah}} = \sqrt{(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} - \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m)^T S^{-1} (\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} - \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m)}. \quad (7.11)$$

For using (7.11), one needs to define an appropriate S . One can show:

$$\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} - \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m = \frac{\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} - \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m}{m+1}. \quad (7.12)$$

Considering the fact that $\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}$ and $\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m$ are independent given the observed part of the sample, one may use:

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Cov}\left(\frac{\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1} - \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m}{m+1}\right) &= \frac{1}{(m+1)^2} [\text{Var}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}) + \text{Var}(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_m)] = \\ &= \frac{1}{(m+1)^2} [\text{Var}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{m+1}) + \widehat{W}_m]. \end{aligned} \quad (7.13)$$

The division by $m+1$ in (7.12) makes this an inappropriate candidate for S , as it changes every time, while we need to monitor convergence of the procedure, relative to a sufficiently stable yardstick.

Other choices for S include the within, between, or combined covariance matrix of the parameters at step $m + 1$, i.e., \widehat{W}_{m+1} , \widehat{B}_{m+1} , or \widehat{V}_{m+1} , respectively; here \widehat{V} is computed as in 7.5. Our simulation results show that \widehat{B}_{m+1} cannot be an appropriate choice since being normalized by the variability of the differences, the resulting Mahalanobis distance is not sensitive to the fraction of missing data. This will be discussed in more detail in Section 7.1.4.

An appropriate distance should be sensitive to the fraction of missing data, but robust against rescaling model parameters. Both \widehat{W} and \widehat{V} serve these purposes, but our simulation results show that (see Section 7.1.4) for some large values of variance components, \widehat{W} would show chaotic behavior from one iteration to another in some cases, while \widehat{V} balances between and within variability, hence behave more stably. Therefore, our proposal for an appropriate distance in Step 3 is the Mahalanobis distance with $S = \widehat{V}_{m+1}$. In cases where the quantity of interest is unitless, e.g., a correlation coefficient, a coefficient of variation, a coefficient of determination, a p -value, etc., using ℓ_p -norm type distances such as in (7.9)–(7.10) is recommended, especially when obtaining the variance of the quantity of interest is not straightforward. Of course, one may use any tailored distance according to the problem at hand, this would not change the proposed iterative procedure.

As mentioned earlier, the convergence speed of the imi procedure depends on various factors such as the model, the parameter space, and the fraction of missing data. Also, the choice of the distance in Step 3 of

the procedure plays a determining role when it comes to deciding when to stop. Therefore, formulating a fixed universal threshold for ϵ in Step 3 of the proposed iterative procedure seems not to be possible. However, based on extensive simulation results, when using a Mahalanobis-types distance as in (7.11) with $S = \hat{V}_{m+1}$, considering $\epsilon = 0.05$ leads to a liberal choice of M . If one wants to select a conservative M , we propose to set $\epsilon = 0.01$. In the same setting, such choices of ϵ would select M 's that are approximately in agreement with Rubin's classic suggestion, e.g., to use $M = 5$ for 10% missing data (See Table 7.1).

In general, for selecting ϵ , one needs to consider the nature of the quantity of interest when deciding on ϵ . For example, when dealing with p -values, one needs to ensure that increasing the number of imputed datasets would not change the result of the test, so the distance between two p -values from imputed datasets number m and $m + 1$, near or smaller than the significance, α , should be smaller than, for example, $\alpha/10$; see Section 7.1.5. Therefore, in case of p -values, we propose to use a Euclidean distance with $\epsilon = \alpha/10$. Note that, given the null hypothesis, the p -value is uniformly distributed. Therefore, for an appropriate ϵ and up to a constant coefficient, using a Mahalanobis distance is equivalent to the Euclidean distance.

As Wald (1939) pointed out, the two central procedures in theory of statistics are parameter estimation and hypothesis testing. To summarize our discussion above, we proposed to use a different ϵ for each of these procedures. In case of parameter estimation one may use 0.05 or 0.01,

and in case of hypothesis testing (using p -values) one may use $\alpha/10$.

7.1.4 Simulation study

In order to study our proposed method, two simulation plans are considered. One with a multivariate normal vector, and the other with a logistic regression model. Using these two simulation settings, the performance of our proposed procedure for both parameter estimation and hypothesis testing will be studied. The results will be displayed, compared, and discussed, after presenting the plans.

Simulation plan

A simulation study is undertaken for a multivariate normal vector as well as data generated from a logistic regression model. Two types of covariance structures are considered for the multivariate normal model: compound-symmetry (CS) and first-order autoregressive (AR(1)). Consider \mathbf{Y}_i a vector of length k , then $\mathbf{Y}_i \sim N(\mu\mathbf{1}_k, \Sigma)$. Under CS, $\Sigma = \sigma^2 I_k + \tau J_k$, for $\sigma^2, \tau > 0$ and I_k and J_k the identity and all-ones matrices, respectively. For AR(1), we have $\Sigma = \sigma^2 C$ where the (i, j) element of C is defined as $\rho^{|i-j|}$, for $\sigma^2 > 0, -1 \leq \rho \leq +1$.

All data are generated for $\mu = 0$. The length of each random vector is set to 5, and the sample size is considered to be 100. For each covariance structure in the multivariate normal case 18 different scenarios are considered as combinations of the following settings:

- Two proportions of missing data are used: 10% and 70%;

- Three σ^2 values are used: 1, 16, 64;
- Three ρ values are used: 0.2, 0.5, 0.8. In case of CS, the corresponding τ is computed given the specified ρ using $\tau = \rho\sigma^2/(1 - \rho)$.

Logistic regression data are generated with parameters $(\beta_0, \beta_1, \beta_2) = (0.2, -2, 0.5)$, where the design matrix is generated using each of the 9 considered CS settings. The parameters of the CS and AR(1) models are estimated using the results in Hermans et al. (2018c) and Hermans et al. (2018b), respectively. The logistic regression is fitted using R function `glm`. The proportion of missing values are the same as in the multivariate normal scenarios (10% and 70%).

The missing data for all of these scenarios are generated under a missing at random (MAR) mechanism using the function `ampute` in the R package `mice`; see Schouten et al. (2017) and Schouten et al. (2018). The function `ampute` implements a multivariate approach to generate missing data by assigning a weight to each observation. In case of a missing at random (MAR) mechanism, these weights only depend on the observed part of the sample. Based on the assigned weights, a logistic distribution will be used to compute the probability of missingness. An observation with a larger weight has more chance to be missing.

Each incomplete dataset is imputed 500 times using a multivariate normal predictive model in the R package `Amelia2`, and each scenario is repeated 100 times as well.

To compute the distance between two steps in our iterative procedure,

we use five different measures: Euclidean distance (7.9), ℓ_∞ -norm (7.10), Mahalanobis distance (7.11) with S selected as within (\widehat{W}), between (\widehat{B}), and combined covariance matrix (\widehat{V}) of the estimated parameter vector.

There are two main outcomes of interest from different considered scenarios. First, the convergence plot for different distances. Second, the M for which the iterative procedure terminates. Such M is computed using seven values $\epsilon = 0.005, 0.01, 0.02, 0.03, 0.04$ and 0.05 , and for each ϵ , three successive validation steps are considered: $k_0 = 1, 3$ and 5 .

In order to evaluate our proposed method in case of p -values, one-sample t -tests are applied with $H_0 : \mu = d_0$ on the first column of the data generated from each setting of CS and AR(1) covariance structure. In addition, paired t -tests are also performed for testing $H_0 : \mu_1 - \mu_2 = d_0$ for the first and the second columns of data generated using each setting of CS and AR(1) covariance matrices. To see the effect of the test value on the convergence, we have considered $d_0 = 0$ and $d_0 = 10$. As the p -value is a scalar, we use Euclidean distance (7.9) to measure distance of two successive steps. In case of p -values, again the convergence plots are provided; also, the sufficient number of imputed datasets is computed for two values of $\epsilon = 0.05/10$ and $0.05/100$. For each ϵ , three successive validation steps are considered: $k_0 = 1, 3$ and 5 .

Simulation results

As displaying the results of 18 different scenarios takes a lot of space, here we discuss all of the outcomes but only display the results for one of them. The rest of the results will be available in the R package `imi` via 9 lists of datasets, the function `imi.make.plots` can be used to produce similar plots as in Figure 7.1 and Figure 7.2 for other scenarios. Further information can be found in the documentation of the package.

Figure 7.1 shows the convergence plots for the scenario with $\sigma^2 = 16$ and $\rho = 0.5$. As one may see, while using all of the distance functions a decreasing trend can be observed, but as expected Euclidean and ℓ_∞ norms, as well as Mahalanobis distance with $S = \widehat{B}$ are not performing well. On the other hand, the latter with both $S = \widehat{W}$ and $S = \widehat{V}$ performs fine. Note that for 70% missing data for some of the imputed datasets, quasi-complete separation occurs when fitting logistic regression. In such cases, a new imputed dataset is generated.

An interesting observation from Figure 7.1 is the different convergence rate for logistic regression compared with the multivariate normal case. As one may see, for 10% missing data, the logistic regression converges almost with the same speed as 70% missing data in case of a multivariate normal vector parameter estimates. That highlights the effect of the model (thus not only the proportion of missing data) when determining a sufficient number of imputed datasets.

Figure 7.2 shows the convergence plots using $M = 500$ for the p -values

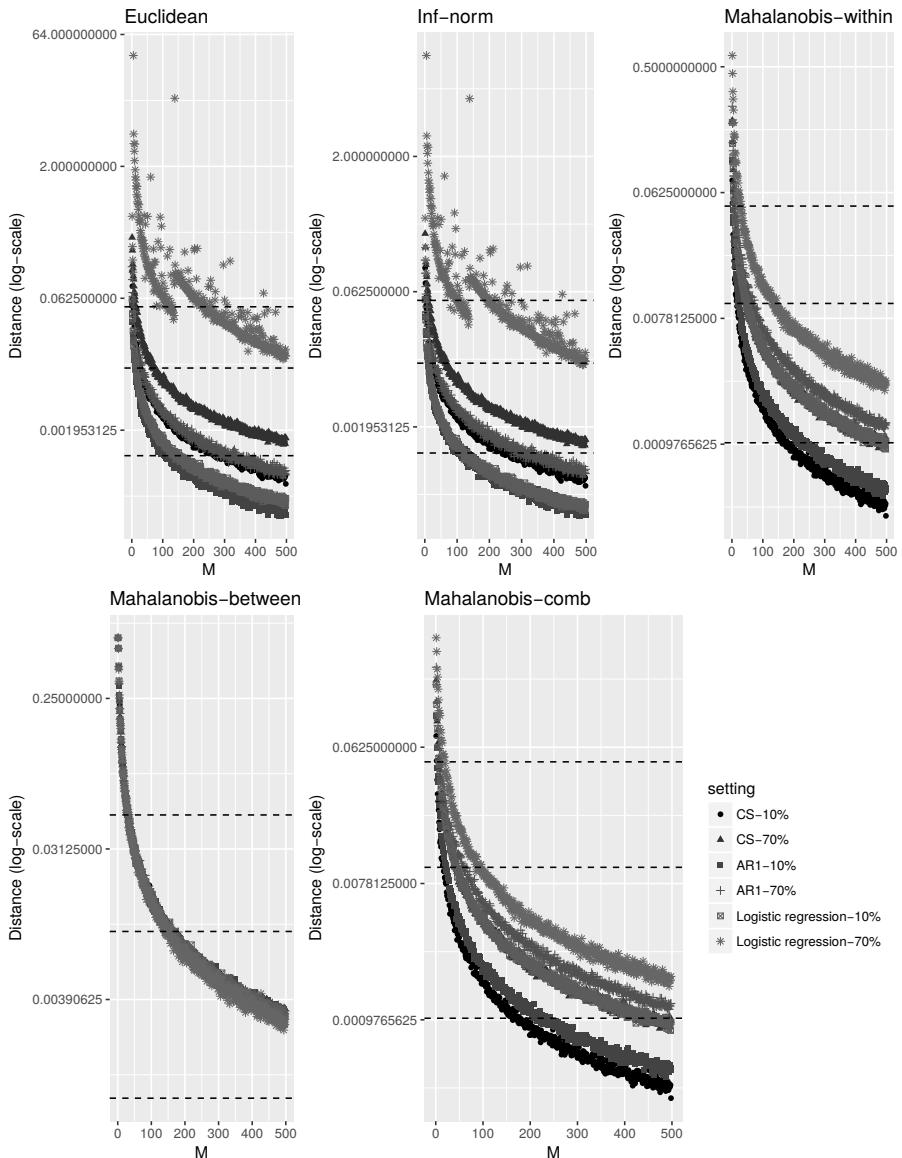


Figure 7.1: Convergence plots for multivariate normal random vectors parameter estimates with CS and AR(1) covariance matrix structures (with $\sigma^2 = 16$ and $\rho = 0.5$), as well as a logistic regression model, using five different distance functions: Euclidean norm, ℓ_∞ -norm, and Mahalanobis distance with within, between, and combined covariance matrices over imputed sets of data for two proportion of missing data: 10% and 70%. Each point in the plot is the average over 100 replications. The three horizontal dashed lines are $\epsilon = 0.05, 0.01, 0.001$, respectively.

of one sample and paired t -tests for two different test values (0, 10). The distance between two p -values is computed using the Euclidean distance. As one may see, one important factor that should be taken into account when determining M is the test value. When it is far from the actual parameter convergence is achieved for a much smaller M .

To explore the selected M using various ϵ 's and k_0 's to evaluate our proposals ($\epsilon = 0.01$ or 0.05 , and $k_0 = 3$), Tables 7.1 and 7.2 show the selected M for parameter estimation in multivariate normal and logistic regression (Table 7.1) and p -values of one sample and paired t -tests (Table 7.2). As one may see, again the effect of proportion of missing data and the model is verified on the selected sufficient M . While a dataset with a larger proportion of missing data needs a larger M , the number of sufficient imputed datasets in case of logistic regression is different from multivariate normal, even for a smaller proportion of missing data. This would highlight the role of a procedure that accounts for all of these aspects.

Also, it seems that our proposals for ϵ and k_0 are sensible in terms of comparing with Rubin's classical rule suggesting 3–5 imputed datasets for 10% missing data. In case of p -values it seems $\epsilon = 0.005$ together with $k_0 = 3$ works acceptably fine.

An interesting observation when comparing the selected M for different values of ρ is the effect of *missing information*. For the same fraction of missing data, when the correlation is larger, the selected M is smaller. That would suggest that what really matters is not only the fraction of

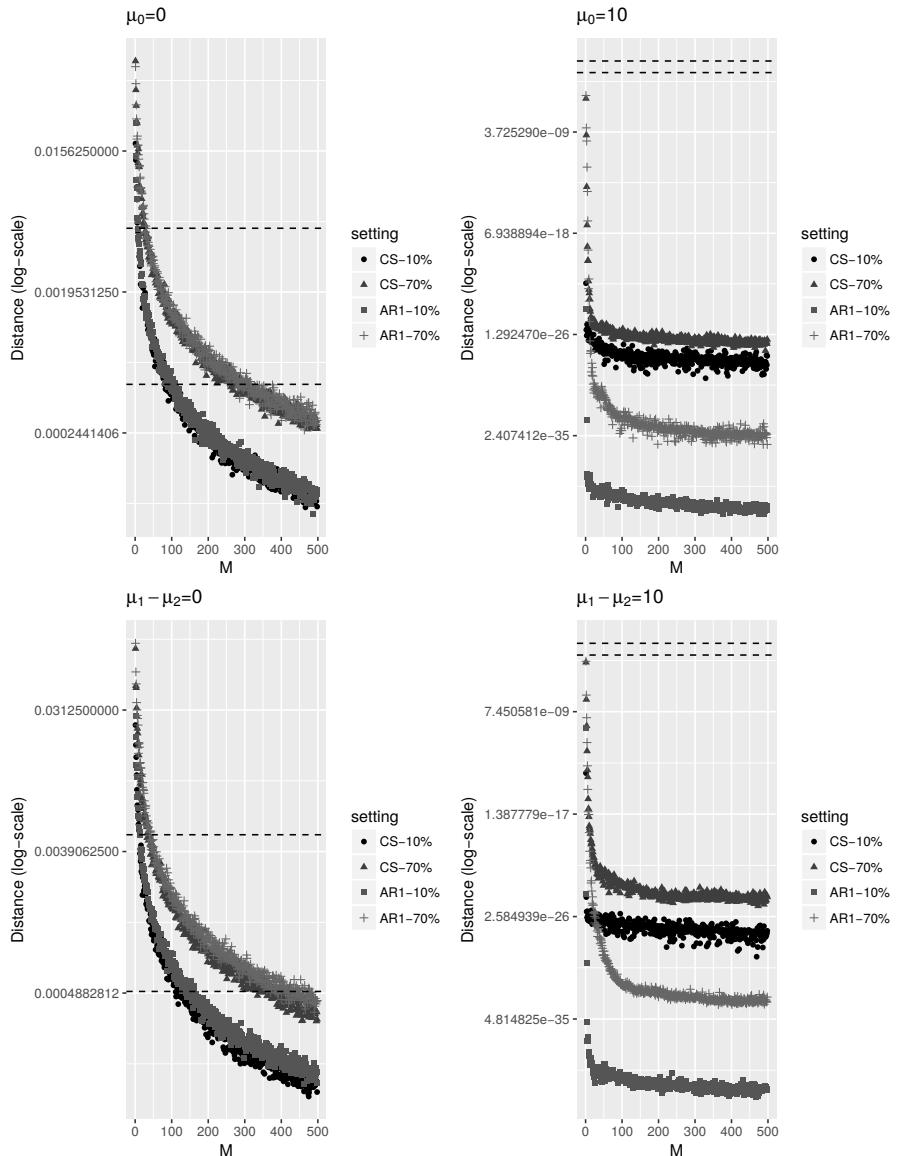


Figure 7.2: Convergence plots for the p -values of one sample (first row) and paired (second row) t -tests for different values of test statistics. The data are generated from a (multivariate) normal distribution with mean 0 and CS and AR(1) covariance matrices (with $\sigma^2 = 16$ and $\rho = 0.5$). The missing values are generated with proportions 10% and 70%. The two horizontal dashed lines are $\epsilon = 0.005, 0.0005$, respectively.

missing data, but the fraction of missing information. As an extreme case, consider two variables X and Y in a given dataset, suppose X is complete and Y is partially missing. Assume further that $Y_i = X_i$ ($\rho = 1$), for every subject. In this case one imputation would be sufficient, no matter the fraction of missing items. Figure 7.3 shows the selected M for different scenarios with $\sigma^2 = 16$ and $\rho = 0.5$ and 0.8 , and $k_0 = 3$. As one may see, in most of the cases, for the same proportion of missing data and model, the selected M is smaller when ρ is larger.

7.1.5 Applications

In this section, two applications of multiple imputations are considered: fitting a logistic regression to incomplete data, as well as combining p -values from a one-sample t -test for a set of incomplete data. The number of imputed datasets will be determined using the proposed iterative procedure via the R package `imi`.

Leuven Eye Study. Logistic regression

The Leuven Eye Study (LES; Pinto et al., 2015), is an extensive observational study of glaucoma performed at the ophthalmology department of UZ Leuven. The dataset so far consists of 141 variables measured for 585 subjects. As this study was performed in a clinical setting, it was not feasible to measure all these variables for all of the subjects. Because of that, missingness is a considerable problem. Among these 141 variables, 130 of them are selected to be used in multiple imputation. An analysis was performed to study which risk factors are relevant for

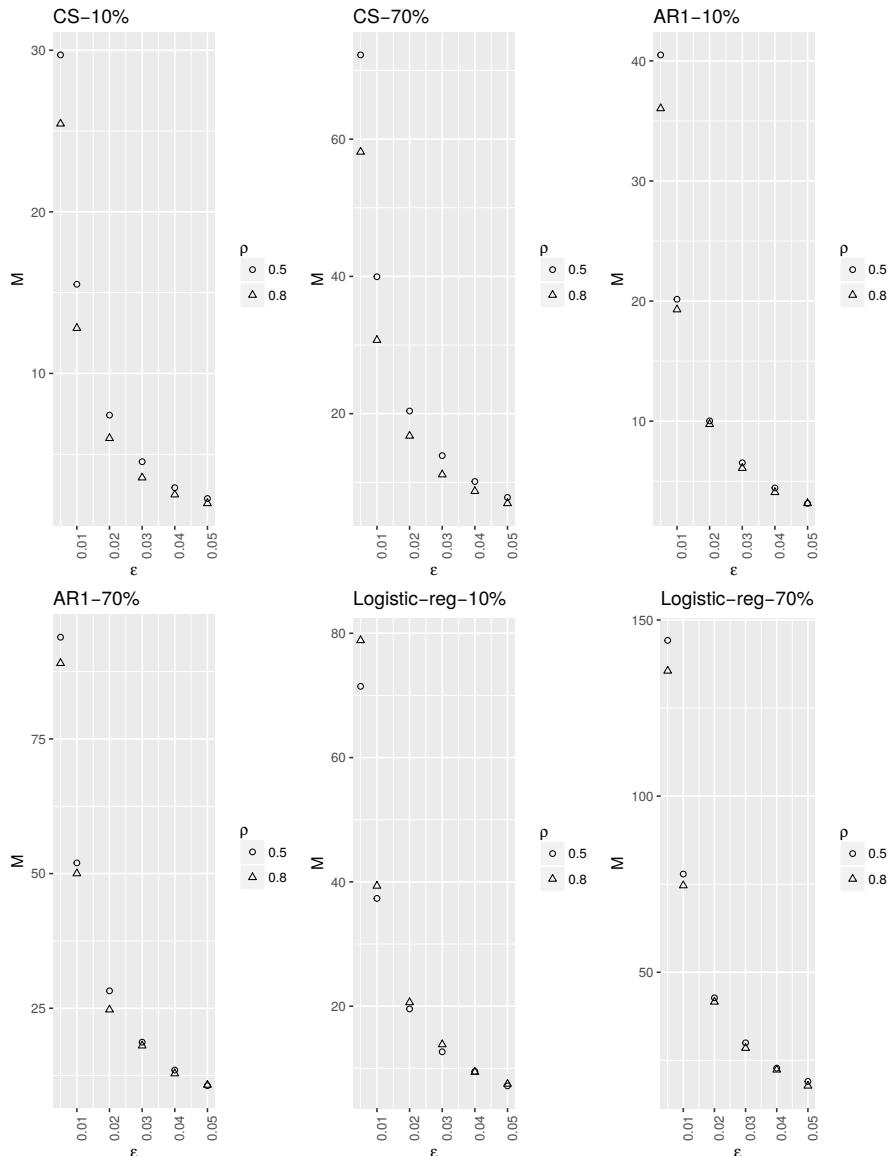


Figure 7.3: Averaged selected M with $k_0 = 3$ for data generated from a multivariate normal with mean 0 and covariance matrix with CS and AR(1) structures with $\sigma^2 = 16$ and $\rho = 0.5, 0.8$, as well as a logistic regression model. The proportions of missing data are 10% and 70%. Each point in the plot is the average over 100 replications.

the binary outcome defined as normal vs. glaucoma. The risk factors selected for the model include both structural and functional measurements of the eye (cup to disc ratio, corneal thickness, visual acuity), previous medical history (gender, sleep apnea, rhythm disorder, having had cataract surgery, being medicated with statins or calcium channel blockers) and more variable biometric measurements, like intra-ocular pressure and diastolic blood pressure.

Figure 7.4 (bottom-left) shows a histogram of the number of missing values (out of 585 patients) in the LES dataset. As one may see, the number of missing values is diverse. Also the patterns of missing values could be different from variable to variable. Therefore, determining M using classical or simulation-based approaches could be a challenge here. Using our proposal, it could be more convenient to determine the sufficient number of imputed datasets.

Considering the size of the dataset as well as various variable types, in order to impute the missing values the fully conditional specification (FCS) approach (van Buuren, 2007, 2012, and van Buuren et al., 2006) is employed. For continuous variables, predictive mean matching, Little (1988), is used for generating the imputed datasets. Also, a binary logistic regression predictive model is used to impute binary variables. In the specific case of one variable with three levels, a polytomous logistic regression predictive model is used. In order to create a sufficient number of imputed datasets we use the function `imi.glm` in the R package `imi`.

We have selected 2 for the initial number of imputations (M_0). Also,

the convergence criterion should be successively validated 3 times to terminate the procedure ($k_0 = 3$). Figure 7.4 (bottom-right) shows the convergence plot for this model on the LES data. As one may see, with $\epsilon = 0.05$ (the liberal choice) and $k_0 = 3$ we need $M = 58$ imputed datasets, while with the conservative choice, $\epsilon = 0.01$, one may need to generate $M = 250$ imputed datasets.

Cholesterol data. One sample t -test p -values

The cholesterol dataset includes cholesterol levels for 28 patients treated at a Pennsylvania medical center. The cholesterol levels have been recorded on day 2, day 4 and day 14 after an attack for each patient. However, there are 9 missing values for day 14. This dataset was analyzed by Schafer (1997, Chapter 5) and is publicly available in R package `norm2`.

Here we use our R implemented function `imi.t.test` to sufficiently impute this dataset and perform the t -test on it for two different test-values ($\mu_0 = 200, 220$).

Again, we ask for two initial imputations and then 3 successive validation steps ($M_0 = 2, k_0 = 3$). Figure 7.4 (top) shows the convergence plot for $\mu_0 = 200$ (left) and $\mu_0 = 220$ (right). In each case the vertical dashed line shows the selected M for different values of ϵ . As one may see, when testing $H_0 : \mu = 200$, for $\epsilon = 0.05/10$ and $k_0 = 3$, only $M = 9$ imputed datasets are sufficient, changing ϵ to $0.05/100$ will increase M to 28. When testing $H_0 : \mu = 220$, however, more imputations are needed. For

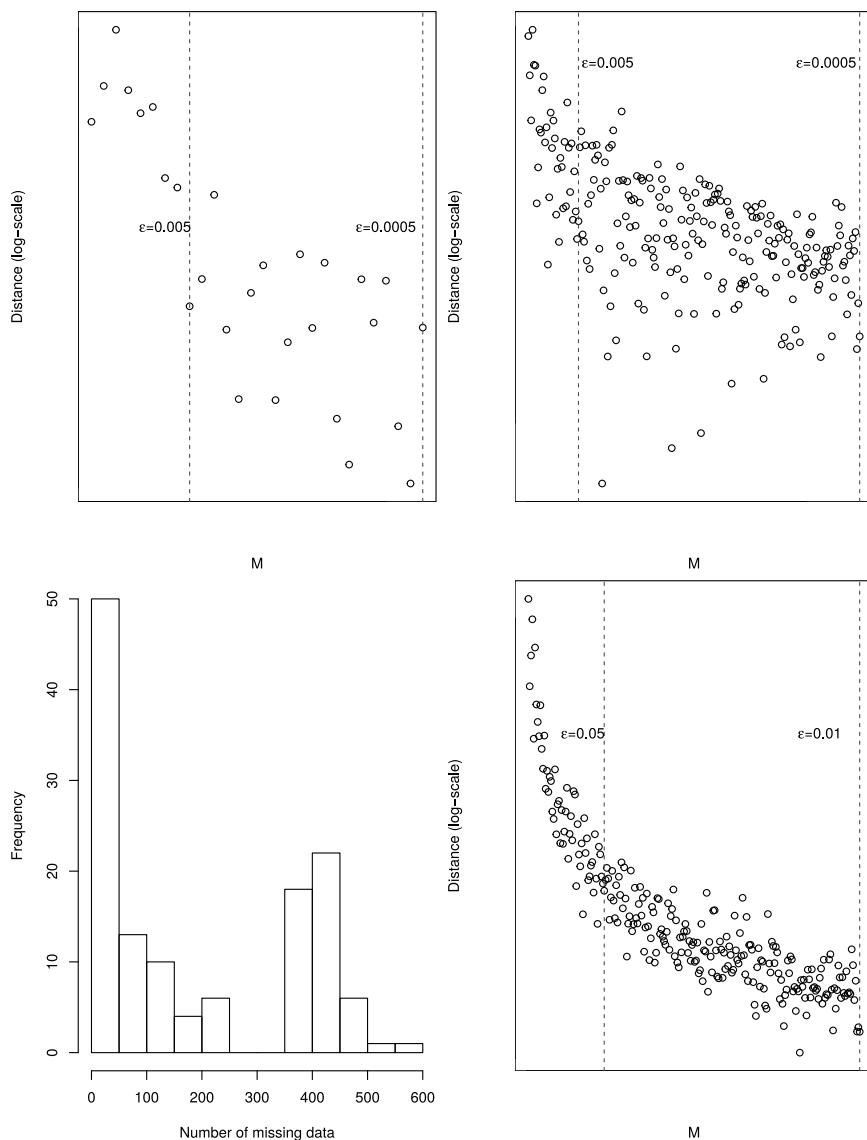


Figure 7.4: Convergence plots for p -values of t -test on cholesterol data (top) with $\mu_0 = 200$ (left) and $\mu_0 = 220$ (right) test values, and LES logistic regression (bottom-right), with $\epsilon = 0.05, 0.01$, $M_0 = 2$, and $k_0 = 3$. The dashed vertical line shows the selected M for different values of ϵ . The histogram for the number of missing values in LES dataset (bottom-left) is also presented.

$\epsilon = 0.05/10$ we get $M = 37$ and for $\epsilon = 0.05/100$ we obtain $M = 239$.

7.1.6 Discussion and concluding remarks

Multiple imputation is an appealing and extensively used method to analyze incomplete data, or, even more broadly, data that can be cast in a missing-data framework (Van der Elst et al., 2015). There is widely held and largely justified wisdom that a small number of imputation suffices for many practical purposes, even though Schafer (1997) states that the number depends on the amount of missing information, the data type under study, and the inferential purpose. We have presented a very simple procedure, that is based on conventional large-sample convergence results, by merely using the fact that multiple imputation is in itself a sampling mechanism. It is based on comparing the estimates under M and $M + 1$ imputations, the procedure stops when the distance between two steps become smaller than a pre-defined ϵ . One needs to select an initial number of imputations as well as number of steps the stopping rule should be validated. This would prevent early stopping when two consecutive quantities of interest are unusually close. Thus, when convergence is suggested, to play safe, one could still go on for a while, and wait until convergence has been confirmed. Stopping too early would lead to less precise estimates, or unwanted decision making, while the main problem with too high an M is the computational cost, also when the distance between two steps becomes very small, due to a small ϵ (or equivalently selecting a large M), some numerical underflow issues could occur.

There are two main parameters that are needed to be specified before applying our procedure on an incomplete dataset. The stopping rule for the distance between two steps, ϵ , and the number of steps this criterion should be successively validated, k_0 . Based on our numerical experiences, we suggest $k_0 = 3$ validation steps is enough in most of the applications. For ϵ , the choice depends on the chosen distance which itself depends on the purpose of the analysis: estimation or hypothesis testing. For estimation purposes, i.e., estimating the parameters and their precision, we suggest to use a Mahalanobis distance with $S = \widehat{V}_{M+1}$, then $\epsilon = 0.05$ as a liberal choice and $\epsilon = 0.01$ as a conservative choice. For p -values at $100(1 - \alpha)\%$ level of confidence, we suggest to use the Euclidean distance with $\alpha/10$ as a liberal choice, and as a conservative choice our proposal is to use $\alpha/100$. Of course, as discussed in Section 7.1.3, the convergence rate depends on various aspects (proportion of missing data, the model, dimension of the parameter space). Therefore, it is very well possible that for less conventional applications one needs different tailor-made values for ϵ and k_0 .

Simulations and case studies, the latter with admittedly a large fraction of missingness, indicate that it might be needed, in many practical settings, to generate a number of imputations well above what common wisdom prescribes.

Our method has several advantages. First, it is applicable in any context where multiple imputation is useful, irrespective of the amount of missing information, the model used, or the target of inference. Second, imputed

data sets can be generated one by one, and each time one can easily decide about the need to continue adding new imputed data sets, depending on the research question(s) to be answered. Third, the procedure can easily be automated since ‘expert judgement’ is not needed. Finally, no post-hoc sensitivity assessment to the number of imputations is required, allowing the stopping criterion to be specified prior to the data analysis or even prior to the data collection.

Furthermore, our implementation of this procedure in R package `imi` could make it more available for different applications. The current version of this package includes the *t*-test (one sample, two samples and paired), as well as linear and generalized linear regression models. For each application one has the possibility to generate a sufficient number of imputed datasets. In case of existence of some already generated imputed sets of data, one can examine their sufficiency for the desired analyses. When they are not sufficient it is also possible to generate new imputed datasets till M becomes sufficiently large. The considered interactive options allow the user to select M_0 and/or k_0 based on the time it takes to generate 2 imputed datasets and perform the analyses on them.

7.2 On using multiple imputation for exploratory factor analysis of incomplete data

7.2.1 Introduction

Factor analysis and principal component analysis (PCA) are techniques mainly based on singular value decomposition of covariance matrices of multivariate data, e.g., a questionnaire, several measurements on a subject, etc. In multivariate data, it is very well possible that for some of the subjects, one or more of the variables are missing. One approach to deal with this phenomenon is listwise deletion, i.e., removing all subjects with missing values and only using the observed part of the data. This would lead to loss of information, and worse than that, biased estimates and conclusions.

As an alternative to listwise deletion, Wold and Lyttkens (1969) proposed the nonlinear iterative partial least squares estimation (NIPALS) procedure, which uses an alternating weighted least squares algorithm and estimates principal components one by one in a sequential manner. Gabriel and Zamir (1979) extended NIPALS to directly estimate the desired subspace, rather than sequentially. Iterative principal component analysis, Kiers (1997), estimates the missing values and the principal components simultaneously. The main difference between iterative PCA and NIPALS is that NIPALS tries to estimate principal components regardless of the missing values, while iterative PCA produces a single

imputation for the missing values as well. However, a main problem with the iterative PCA of Kiers (1997) is overfitting. This problem would become more serious when the amount of missing data becomes larger. Authors like Josse, Husson, and Pagès (2009) and Ilin and Raiko (2010) proposed a regularized version of iterative PCA to overcome this problem.

Recently, authors like Josse, Pagès, and Husson (2011), Dray and Josse (2015) and Lorenzo-Seva and Van Ginkel (2016) have considered multiple imputation (MI) in the sense of Rubin (Rubin, 2004; Schafer, 1997; Carpenter and Kenward, 2012) to deal with the missing data problem in PCA and factor analysis. Rubin's multiple imputation first imputes the data using, for example, a joint (Schafer (1997)) or conditional (van Buuren (2007)) model, then in the second step performs the usual analysis on each completed (imputed) data. The third and last step uses appropriate combination rules to combine the results from each imputed data. An appropriate combination rule needs to respect the fact that the imputed data are, after all, unobserved. Thus, it needs to take into account that each missing value is replaced with several plausible values. The focus of the current paper is on this last approach, where the multiple imputation is done prior to the desired analysis, e.g., PCA or factor analysis.

In this paper, the above problem will be described and difficulties of using MI in case of factor analysis and PCA will be discussed. Possible solutions will be reviewed and an alternative simple solution will be

presented. A simulation study will evaluate the proposed method. Also, considering the “Divorce in Flanders” dataset as a case study, the application of the proposed method will be illustrated. The paper ends with concluding notes.

7.2.2 Using multiple imputation with factor analysis: a review

Consider p correlated random variables $\mathbf{X}'_i = \{X_{i1}, \dots, X_{ip}\}$ with observed covariance matrix $\text{Cov}(\mathbf{X})$, of which the population value is Σ . In general, the idea of principal component analysis is to find as few as possible (uncorrelated) linear combinations of elements of \mathbf{X} such that their variance becomes as large as possible (needed) subject to proper standardization. One can show (Johnson and Wichern, 1992) if $\lambda_1 \geq \lambda_2 \geq \dots \geq \lambda_p \geq 0$ are the ordered eigenvalues of Σ , and (λ_i, e_i) is the i th eigenvalue-eigenvector pair, then the i th principal component is given by:

$$Y_i = e_i' \mathbf{X}, \quad \text{Var}(Y_i) = \lambda_i, \quad \text{Cov}(Y_i, Y_k) = 0, \quad i \neq k. \quad (7.14)$$

As one may see in (7.14), the PCA (or factor analysis from a wider perspective) are obtained using singular value decomposition of the covariance (correlation) matrix. The eigenvalues of Σ are the roots of the characteristic polynomial $|\Sigma - \lambda I|$ where $|A|$ denotes the determinant of matrix A and I is the identity matrix of the same order as Σ . Obviously, there is no natural ordering among roots of a polynomial. Further, as

one may see in (7.14), λ_i represents a variance. It thus makes sense to order the eigenvalues in a descending manner. The problem arises when using multiple imputation prior to the factor analysis or PCA.

Consider $X_{ij}^{(m)}$ as the observed value for i th subject ($i = 1, \dots, N$) of j th variable ($j = 1, \dots, p$) in the m th imputed dataset. The eigenvector corresponding to the largest eigenvalue of $\Sigma^{(m)} = \text{Cov}(X^{(m)})$ gives the structure related to the first latent factor, and there is no guarantee that the eigenvector corresponding to the largest eigenvalue of $\Sigma^{(k)} = \text{Cov}(X^{(k)})$ ($k \neq m$) is comparable with the one from the m th imputed data. In other words, averaging the eigenvectors (principal axes, factor loadings) using the order or the obtained eigenvalues of the covariance matrix estimated from each imputed set is likely to lead to misleading or meaningless results.

In order to overcome this problem, Dray and Josse (2015) have averaged the imputed values to have one single complete dataset. Other authors like Josse et al. (2011) and Lorenzo-Seva and Van Ginkel (2016) proposed to first impute the data, then perform the PCA or factor analysis on each imputed dataset separately. After obtaining the eigenvectors (factor loadings), because of the discussed problem of ordering, one needs an intermediate step before the usual averaging. This step consists of the use of the class of generalized procrustes rotations (Ten Berge (1977)) to make these matrices as similar as possible. After rotating the obtained factor loadings simultaneously, the next step would be the usual averaging.

One intermediate solution in place of averaging the imputed values (Dray and Josse, 2015) or averaging the factor loadings (Lorenzo-Seva and Van Ginkel, 2016) could be to estimate the covariance matrix from imputed sets of data using Rubin’s rules first, and then apply the PCA or factor analysis on this combined covariance matrix. This proposal will be discussed in the next section.

7.2.3 Using multiple imputation with factor analysis: a proposal

Consider $X^{(obs)}$ a dataset with missing values and $X^{(1)}, \dots, X^{(M)}$ as the M imputed datasets with estimated covariance matrices $\widehat{\Sigma^{(1)}}, \dots, \widehat{\Sigma^{(M)}}$. Using Rubin’s rules (Rubin (2004)) the multiple imputation estimate of Σ can be obtained as follows:

$$\tilde{\Sigma} = \frac{1}{M} \sum_{i=1}^M \widehat{\Sigma_M}. \quad (7.15)$$

Having $\tilde{\Sigma}$, one may perform PCA or FA directly on it, and then the problem of factor ordering would vanish. Of course, that would not come for free. Estimating the covariance matrix first, and then performing FA would make impossible the direct use of Rubin’s combination rules for precision purposes. Therefore, one may consider indirect or alternative solutions. We will consider this point in more detail and propose a straightforward solution. It is worth noting that this is not required if no precision estimates are needed, e.g., when principal components are merely calculated for descriptive purposes or, in general, when there is

no need to either make inferences about them or select a sufficiently small subset of principal components.

An important aspect of PCA or FA is determining the number of factors or principal axes. One popular criterion to determine the number of factors/PCs is the proportion of explained variance. The proportion of explained variance based on the first k factors, γ_k , is

$$\gamma_k = \frac{\sum_{j=1}^k \lambda_j}{\sum_{j=1}^p \lambda_j}, \quad (7.16)$$

with λ_j as in (7.14). When using MI, one needs to ensure the correct amount of information present in the data is used. This is also important when estimating γ_k . This can be done by constructing a confidence interval for γ_k using the estimate and variance obtained by properly taking imputation into account. Consider $\Lambda = (\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_p)$ and Δ a diagonal matrix with $\lambda_1 \geq \dots \geq \lambda_p$ as its diagonal elements. For large samples we have (Anderson, 1963; Johnson and Wichern, 1992; Larsen and Warne, 2010):

$$\widehat{\Lambda} \sim N_p \left(\Lambda, \frac{2}{N} \Delta^2 \right). \quad (7.17)$$

Therefore, for large N the estimated eigenvalues become uncorrelated. Consider the pair $(\sum_{j=1}^k \widehat{\lambda}_j, \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{\lambda}_j)$. Using (7.17) leads to:

$$\text{Cov} = \begin{pmatrix} \sum_{j=1}^k \widehat{\lambda}_j \\ \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{\lambda}_j \end{pmatrix} = \frac{2}{N} \begin{pmatrix} \sigma_{11} & \sigma_{11} \\ \sigma_{11} & \sigma_{22} \end{pmatrix}, \quad (7.18)$$

with,

$$\sigma_{11} = \sum_{j=1}^k \widehat{\lambda_j}^2, \quad \sigma_{22} = \sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{\lambda_j}^2. \quad (7.19)$$

Then, using the Delta method, the variance of $\widehat{\gamma_k}$ can be written as follows,

$$\text{Var}(\widehat{\gamma_k}) \approx \frac{2}{N} \left(\sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{\lambda_j} \right)^{-2} \left[(1 - 2\widehat{\gamma_k})\sigma_{11} + \widehat{\gamma_k}^2 \sigma_{22} \right] \quad (7.20)$$

Now, equipped with $\widehat{\gamma_k}$ and $\text{Var}(\widehat{\gamma_k})$, one finds the MI estimates of them using Rubin's rule. Consider $\widehat{\gamma_{km}}$ and $\text{Var}(\widehat{\gamma_{km}})$ the estimated γ_k and its variance in the m th imputed data, then

$$\widetilde{\gamma_k} = \frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^M \widehat{\gamma_{km}}, \quad \text{Var}(\widetilde{\gamma_k}) = \frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^M \text{Var}(\widehat{\gamma_{km}}) + \frac{M+1}{M} S_{\widehat{\gamma_k}}^2, \quad (7.21)$$

where $S_{\widehat{\gamma_k}}^2 = \sum_{m=1}^M (\widehat{\gamma_{km}} - \widetilde{\gamma_k})^2 / (M-1)$ is the sample variance of $\widehat{\gamma_{km}}$ ($m = 1, \dots, M$). Having $\widetilde{\gamma_k}$ and its variance in (7.21), one may easily construct a confidence interval for the proportion of explained variance.

It is well-known that for ratios such as $\widetilde{\gamma_k}$ using Fieller's method (Fieller, 1954) is a sometimes preferable alternative to the Delta method. Using (7.18) and (7.19), Fieller's confidence interval for (7.16) can be calculated as follows:

$$C_1^2 = \frac{\sigma_{11}}{\left(\sum_{j=1}^k \widehat{\lambda_j} \right)^2}, \quad C_2^2 = \frac{\sigma_{11}}{\left(\sum_{j=1}^p \widehat{\lambda_j} \right)^2}, \quad r = \frac{\sigma_{11}}{\sqrt{\sigma_{11}\sigma_{22}}},$$

$$A = C_1^2 + C_2^2 - 2rC_1C_2, \quad B = z_{\alpha/2}^2 C_1^2 C_2^2 (1 - r^2),$$

$$L = \widehat{\gamma}_k \frac{1 - z_{\alpha/2}^2 r C_1 C_2 - z_{\alpha/2} \sqrt{A - B}}{1 - z_{\alpha/2}^2 C_2^2}, \quad (7.22)$$

$$U = \widehat{\gamma}_k \frac{1 - z_{\alpha/2}^2 r C_1 C_2 + z_{\alpha/2} \sqrt{A - B}}{1 - z_{\alpha/2}^2 C_2^2} \quad (7.23)$$

It is well-known (Harville, 1997) that $\text{tr}(\sum_{m=1}^M \Sigma_m) = \sum_{m=1}^M \text{tr}(\Sigma_m)$ where tr denotes the trace of the matrix. As $\text{tr}(A_n) = \sum_{j=1}^p \lambda_j$, where λ_j ($j = 1, \dots, p$) are the eigenvalues, by estimating $\tilde{\Sigma}$ using (7.15), the sum of all of the eigenvalues would not change. But unfortunately, as Fan (1949) has shown, for matrices A , B , and C , with eigenvalues α_i , β_i, δ_i in descending order, respectively, for any $1 \leq k \leq p$ we have,

$$\sum_{i=1}^k \delta_i \leq \sum_{i=1}^k \alpha_i + \sum_{i=1}^k \beta_i. \quad (7.24)$$

That would mean the proportion of explained variance obtained using eigenvalues of $\tilde{\Sigma}$ in (7.15) is always smaller than $\widetilde{\gamma}_k$ in (7.21), i.e., $\widetilde{\gamma}_k$ overestimates the proportion of explained variance using $\tilde{\Sigma}$. In order to check the validity of the proposed method, one may make sure that the estimated explained proportion of variance obtained using $\tilde{\Sigma}$ falls in the estimated confidence interval for γ_k directly obtained from the imputed sets of data. Otherwise, using the proposed approach is not recommended.

7.2.4 Simulations

In order to evaluate the proposed methodology a simple simulation is performed in this section. The sample size is set to $N = 1000$, number of variables is $p = 10$, and the data are generated from a multivariate normal distribution using Cholesky decomposition of the following covariance matrix:

$$\begin{bmatrix} 9.0 & 5.0 & 5.0 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 \\ 5.0 & 9.0 & 5.0 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 \\ 5.0 & 5.0 & 9.0 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 \\ 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 17.0 & 10.0 & 10.0 & 10.0 & 10.0 & 0.1 & 0.1 \\ 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 10.0 & 17.0 & 10.0 & 10.0 & 10.0 & 0.1 & 0.1 \\ 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 10.0 & 10.0 & 17.0 & 10.0 & 10.0 & 0.1 & 0.1 \\ 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 10.0 & 10.0 & 10.0 & 17.0 & 10.0 & 0.1 & 0.1 \\ 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 10.0 & 10.0 & 10.0 & 10.0 & 17.0 & 0.1 & 0.1 \\ 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 8.0 & 3.0 \\ 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 0.1 & 3.0 & 8.0 \end{bmatrix}$$

For creating missingness in the data, 5%, 10%, 50% of each column were randomly selected and set to NA. The factor analysis is done using function `fa` in R package `psych` with PCA as the method, and no rotation. First, the factor analysis is performed on complete data and the factor loadings and eigenvalues are obtained. Then, for the data including missing values, two different methodologies are applied:

- Impute the data using FCS (van Buuren, 2007) $M = 20$ times

using package **MICE** in R, and then, estimate the covariance matrix using (7.15) and perform factor analysis on it.

- Using regularised iterative principal component analysis (IPCA) in the R package **missMDA** to impute the data a single time, then apply the factor analysis on this imputed dataset.

Furthermore, the proportion of explained variance using complete data is obtained. Also, the γ_k obtained from $\tilde{\Sigma}$ together with $\tilde{\gamma}_k$ and its confidence interval are provided, together with the γ_k obtained for the data imputed using IPCA. In order to compare the factor loadings with the ones from complete data, the ℓ_1 -norm of the difference between two loading matrices is given, i.e., the maximum absolute column sum of this difference. The simulations are repeated 100 times. Table 7.3 summarizes the means and standard deviations of the obtained results.

As one may see in Table 7.3, using $\tilde{\Sigma}$, the obtained loadings are most similar to the ones from the complete data. On the other hand, for γ_k , this method would find the proportion of explained variance very close to the one from the full data. Also, it is always in the confidence interval found directly using Rubin's rules. As one may see, using IPCA, γ_k is estimated larger than its value for the complete data, and that would become even larger when the amount of missing values increases. One possible reason is that IPCA tries to impute the data in a way that the explained variance is maximized (imputing using PC axes), while MI only uses the available information.

7.2.5 Divorce in Flanders

In order to illustrate the proposed methodology we use the Divorce in Flanders (DiF) dataset (Mortelmans, Pasteels, Van Bavel, Bracke, Matthijs, and Van Peer, 2011). DiF contains a sample of marriages registered in the Flemish Region of Belgium, between 1971 and 2008 with an oversampling for dissolved marriages (2/3 dissolved and 1/3 intact marriages). As a part of this study, the participants were asked to complete the validated Dutch version (Denissen, Geenen, Van Aken, Gosling, and Potter, 2008) of Big Five Inventory (BFI) (John and Srivastava, 1999).

The sample at hand consists of 9385 persons in 4472 families. In each family, mother, father, step mother, step father, and one child over 14 were asked to fill in BFI. Note that, depending on the presented family roles and the number of people agreed to participate, the size of the families could vary between 1 and 5. Among these 9385 persons, there are 1218 persons with at least one non-response (out of 44 items). As our main purpose here was to illustrate the use of the proposed method, in order to get rid of the problem of intra-correlation within the families, one person from each family was selected at random to form a sample of uncorrelated subjects. As a result, a random sample of size 4472 was taken where 515 of them had at least one non-response.

This incomplete dataset was imputed using the fully conditional specification (FCS) of van Buuren (2007) using the **MICE** package in R (van Buuren and Groothuis-Oudshoorn, 2011) with the Predictive Mean

Matching (PMM) method (Little, 1988; Vink, Frank, Pannekoek, and Buuren, 2014). The imputation was done $M = 25$ times. The covariance matrix was estimated for each of the imputed sets of data and the factor analysis was done on the averaged estimated covariance matrix, as well as on each imputed set. The latter was used to construct a confidence interval for the proportion of explained variance. The estimated factor loadings are presented in Table 7.4. The Delta method confidence interval for the proportion of explained variance is estimated as (0.418, 0.427) and the Fieller's confidence interval using (7.22) and (7.23) is estimated as (0.417, 0.428). The estimated proportion of explained variance of the first five factors, using the proposed methodology is 0.422, which falls within both of the estimated intervals close to their upper bounds. This is coherent with the validity of the proposed methodology for this incomplete dataset.

7.2.6 Conclusions

Nonresponse and missing values are among at the same time major and common problems in data analysis, especially when it comes to survey data. Multiple imputation, which was first introduced to deal with nonresponse in surveys (Rubin, 2004) has become a key and effective tool to deal with this problem. However, when it comes to combining this methodology with techniques like factor analysis and principal component analysis, due to the problem of ordering factors/principal components, combining the results from different sets of imputed data becomes as issue.

This problem is addressed in this article and a pragmatic solution is proposed, which is justified by theoretical discussion and reasoning. Our proposal states to first estimate the covariance matrix of the correlated variables and then perform the FA/PCA on this single matrix. The theoretical aspects of this methodology are studied and investigated. A confidence interval is proposed for the proportion of explained variance, which can be used as a criterion to decide on the validity of the the proposed method.

The simulation results show comparable performance of the proposed method, when compared to alternative methodologies. To evaluate our proposal in real situations, it is applied to an incomplete BFI dataset; the result was definitely acceptable. The main advantages of using the proposed methodology are: it is compatible with any imputation methodology; implementing it is very straightforward and no extra programming effort is needed. Therefore, it can be used within any desired statistical package or software. It is fast and practical. Also, the proposed confidence interval for proportion of explained variance can be used as an effective criterion to decide about validity of the proposed method.

Table 7.1: Mean, standard deviation (STD) for selected M given different ϵ and k_0 values, and number of times $M > 500$ (out of 100 replications) for different models and different ϵ 's using the Mahalanobis-type distance with $S = \hat{V}$. The results are presented for 3 different successive validation steps $k_0 = 1, 3, 5$.

Model	ϵ	$k_0 = 1$			$k_0 = 3$			$k_0 = 5$		
		Mean	STD	$M > 500$	Mean	STD	$M > 500$	Mean	STD	$M > 500$
CS-10%	0.005	13.82	5.02	0.00	29.16	8.54	0.00	37.63	9.24	0.00
	0.01	7.15	3.08	0.00	15.38	4.88	0.00	19.31	6.01	0.00
	0.02	3.88	1.96	0.00	6.98	3.05	0.00	8.62	3.64	0.00
	0.03	2.67	1.44	0.00	4.36	2.22	0.00	5.31	2.51	0.00
	0.04	2.09	1.06	0.00	3.27	1.71	0.00	3.63	1.91	0.00
	0.05	1.68	0.84	0.00	2.42	1.51	0.00	2.78	1.80	0.00
CS-70%	0.005	30.71	10.28	0.00	71.12	13.25	0.00	94.98	14.39	0.00
	0.01	18.12	5.24	0.00	37.93	8.01	0.00	50.62	9.72	0.00
	0.02	10.06	3.74	0.00	20.73	5.33	0.00	25.04	5.41	0.00
	0.03	6.45	2.59	0.00	13.65	3.95	0.00	16.85	4.39	0.00
	0.04	4.81	2.10	0.00	9.61	3.03	0.00	12.24	3.78	0.00
	0.05	3.94	1.94	0.00	7.67	2.70	0.00	9.40	3.18	0.00
AR(1)-10%	0.005	18.86	7.24	0.00	39.05	11.13	0.00	46.60	12.93	0.00
	0.01	10.37	4.28	0.00	18.72	6.58	0.00	23.81	8.44	0.00
	0.02	4.99	2.33	0.00	9.85	3.57	0.00	11.74	4.29	0.00
	0.03	3.45	1.59	0.00	5.96	2.77	0.00	7.44	3.33	0.00
	0.04	2.40	1.22	0.00	4.15	2.29	0.00	4.67	2.54	0.00
	0.05	2.03	1.07	0.00	3.02	1.65	0.00	3.64	2.15	0.00
AR(1)-70%	0.005	44.30	13.06	0.00	97.12	17.89	0.00	123.94	20.28	0.00
	0.01	23.71	8.08	0.00	51.85	9.49	0.00	64.14	11.04	0.00
	0.02	13.55	4.93	0.00	26.79	6.21	0.00	33.91	6.82	0.00
	0.03	9.28	3.36	0.00	17.81	3.97	0.00	21.94	5.11	0.00
	0.04	6.76	2.65	0.00	13.59	3.34	0.00	16.67	3.93	0.00
	0.05	5.44	2.26	0.00	10.84	2.98	0.00	13.12	3.17	0.00
Logreg-10%	0.005	39.06	16.12	0.00	71.73	24.19	0.00	90.08	29.32	0.00
	0.01	19.95	8.71	0.00	38.31	14.02	0.00	46.67	15.70	0.00
	0.02	11.14	5.26	0.00	20.38	7.42	0.00	25.47	9.62	0.00
	0.03	7.31	3.60	0.00	13.06	5.50	0.00	16.28	6.07	0.00
	0.04	5.36	2.82	0.00	9.98	4.10	0.00	11.72	4.71	0.00
	0.05	4.60	2.56	0.00	7.85	3.38	0.00	9.53	3.78	0.00
Logreg-70%	0.005	61.33	26.34	0.00	140.31	53.29	0.00	174.82	67.77	0.00
	0.01	36.68	15.25	0.00	76.05	25.85	0.00	94.65	32.48	0.00
	0.02	21.35	7.88	0.00	40.75	13.77	0.00	51.16	16.31	0.00
	0.03	14.68	6.37	0.00	28.97	8.96	0.00	34.92	10.65	0.00
	0.04	11.76	4.29	0.00	22.35	6.44	0.00	26.23	7.47	0.00
	0.05	10.01	4.00	0.00	18.99	5.44	0.00	21.77	6.26	0.00

Table 7.2: Mean, standard deviation (STD) for selected M given different ϵ and k_0 values, and number of times $M > 500$ for different models and different ϵ 's for t -test and paired t -test with test value $\mu = 0$. The results are presented for 3 different successive validation steps $k_0 = 1, 3, 5$.

Test	Model	ϵ	$k_0 = 1$			$k_0 = 3$			$k_0 = 5$		
			Mean	STD	$M > 500$	Mean	STD	$M > 500$	Mean	STD	$M > 500$
$\mu_1 = 0$	CS-10%	0.005	2.90	2.55	0.00	8.17	6.74	0.00	11.32	8.93	0.00
		5e-04	12.78	9.70	0.00	50.41	32.28	0.00	83.97	53.85	0.00
	CS-70%	0.005	5.41	3.85	0.00	20.22	10.08	0.00	29.20	14.79	0.00
		5e-04	21.75	12.38	0.00	119.70	57.55	0.00	211.70	93.22	0.00
	AR(1)-10%	0.005	2.76	2.03	0.00	7.55	6.39	0.00	10.55	9.08	0.00
		5e-04	12.73	10.51	0.00	53.61	34.37	0.00	88.68	63.04	0.00
	AR(1)-70%	0.005	5.91	4.34	0.00	20.98	10.62	0.00	30.73	15.85	0.00
		5e-04	22.88	15.28	0.00	120.90	57.80	1.00	214.83	97.30	1.00
	CS-10%	0.005	3.32	2.24	0.00	10.34	7.32	0.00	15.16	11.30	0.00
		5e-04	15.75	11.31	0.00	64.97	37.27	0.00	110.12	58.83	0.00
$\mu_1 - \mu_2 = 0$	CS-70%	0.005	6.62	4.14	0.00	25.41	13.59	0.00	36.49	19.45	0.00
		5e-04	25.94	17.69	0.00	157.88	74.58	6.00	243.37	124.17	6.00
	AR(1)-10%	0.005	4.02	2.78	0.00	11.46	7.58	0.00	16.18	10.01	0.00
		5e-04	14.37	10.65	0.00	74.38	40.09	0.00	134.99	70.34	0.00
	AR(1)-70%	0.005	8.31	5.11	0.00	29.14	14.83	0.00	43.30	19.48	0.00
		5e-04	31.39	17.23	0.00	160.09	72.00	2.00	288.81	112.58	2.00

Table 7.3: Comparing different methods of doing factor analysis with missing data. The confidence interval is calculated using the Delta method.

	Difference with complete data			Proportion of explained variance				
	$\tilde{\Sigma}$	IPCA	Complete	IPCA		MI		
				$\tilde{\Sigma}$	$\tilde{\gamma}_k$	Lower-CI	Upper-CI	
5%-mean	0.08494	0.11056	0.68423	0.69627	0.68402	0.68410	0.65651	0.71169
5%-sd	0.01930	0.01897	0.00822	0.00840	0.00837	0.00837	0.00774	0.00899
10%-mean	0.14074	0.19739	0.68512	0.71071	0.68516	0.68531	0.65746	0.71316
10%-sd	0.12210	0.04949	0.00722	0.00759	0.00769	0.00768	0.00713	0.00824
50%-mean	0.91345	1.23120	0.68472	0.86345	0.68358	0.68503	0.65478	0.71529
05%-sd	0.96514	0.14911	0.00805	0.00779	0.01220	0.01212	0.01159	0.01272

Table 7.4: Factor loadings using oblimin rotation of DiF data using the estimated covariance matrix from multiply imputed data using $M = 25$ imputations.

English items*	Factor loadings				
	C	O	N	E	A
19. worries a lot	0.097	0.076	0.653	-0.098	0.055
14. can be tense	0.181	0.101	0.640	-0.077	-0.089
9r**. is relaxed, handles stress well	-0.134	-0.213	0.624	0.014	0.023
39. gets nervous easily	0.017	0.038	0.701	-0.007	-0.048
24r. is emotionally stable, not easily upset	-0.155	-0.186	0.461	0.009	-0.030
34r. remains calm in tense situations	-0.214	-0.210	0.551	0.121	-0.069
4. is depressed, blue	-0.020	0.042	0.369	-0.296	-0.121
29. can be moody	0.139	0.113	0.323	-0.052	-0.383
1. is talkative	0.093	0.128	0.115	0.614	0.010
21r. tends to be quiet	-0.065	-0.034	0.021	0.757	-0.051
16. generates a lot of enthusiasm	0.290	0.335	-0.002	0.386	0.158
36. is outgoing, sociable	0.084	0.255	0.092	0.399	0.361
6r. is reserved	-0.047	-0.089	-0.113	0.642	0.027
31r. is sometimes shy, inhibited	0.015	-0.185	-0.223	0.581	-0.057
11. is full of energy	0.358	0.209	-0.246	0.239	-0.009
26. has an assertive personality	0.335	0.145	-0.202	0.271	-0.188
40. likes to reflect, play with ideas	0.394	0.395	-0.025	-0.050	0.007
25. is inventive	0.343	0.435	-0.169	0.039	-0.014
30. values artistic, aesthetic experiences	0.083	0.447	-0.001	-0.131	0.122
5. is original, comes up with new ideas	0.291	0.391	-0.073	0.100	-0.028
15. is ingenious, a deep thinker	0.453	0.293	0.098	-0.079	-0.056
20. has an active imagination	0.019	0.520	0.006	0.082	-0.023
10. is curious about many different things	0.297	0.420	-0.117	0.101	-0.007
44. is sophisticated in art, music, or literature	-0.053	0.397	-0.032	-0.077	0.071
41r. has few artistic interests	-0.047	0.256	-0.093	-0.067	0.116
35r. prefers work that is routine	-0.007	0.089	-0.161	0.023	-0.090
3. does a thorough job	0.614	-0.067	0.011	0.012	-0.060
28. perseveres until the task is finished	0.685	-0.086	0.001	-0.045	0.039
18r. tends to be disorganized	0.401	-0.519	0.035	0.010	0.151
23r. tends to be lazy	0.429	-0.402	0.008	0.074	0.173
13. is a reliable worker	0.554	-0.010	0.039	0.035	0.037
33. does things efficiently	0.630	-0.015	-0.017	0.001	0.118
38. makes plans and follows through with them	0.592	0.050	-0.062	0.125	-0.040
43r. is easily distracted	0.355	-0.362	-0.280	-0.057	0.076
8r. can be somewhat careless	0.293	-0.487	0.043	-0.025	0.159
32. is considerate and kind to almost everyone	0.165	0.228	0.122	0.068	0.482
17. has a forgiving nature	0.081	0.221	0.035	0.044	0.421
7. is helpful and unselfish with others	0.180	0.173	0.087	-0.012	0.276
12r. starts quarrels with others	0.015	-0.065	-0.224	-0.116	0.471
37r. is sometimes rude to others	-0.018	-0.127	-0.086	-0.109	0.615
27r. can be cold and aloof	-0.097	-0.051	0.010	0.270	0.504
22. is generally trusting	-0.036	0.276	-0.006	0.041	0.301
2r. tends to find fault with others	-0.055	-0.133	-0.160	-0.185	0.469
42. likes to cooperate with others	0.153	0.193	0.015	0.203	0.249

*The English translations are taken from Denissen et al. (2008).

**Negatively framed items were reversed before analysis.

N = Neuroticism, E = Extraversion, O = Openness to Experience,

C = Conscientiousness, A = Agreeableness.

CHAPTER 8

SOFTWARE PACKAGES

Most of the techniques and methods that are introduced throughout this thesis should be implemented as a computer program to be effective. Therefore, to make our contributions complete, we have developed R packages to implement various methodologies introduced in the previous chapters. R is a freely available programming language for statistical computation and graphics. We have selected R, as it is well received not only among statisticians, but also many users of statistical methods from different areas.

Figure 8.1 shows results of the 16th annual KDnuggets Software Poll based on opinions of about 2800 voters, who chose from a record number of 93 different tools. As we may see, R was by far the most favorite

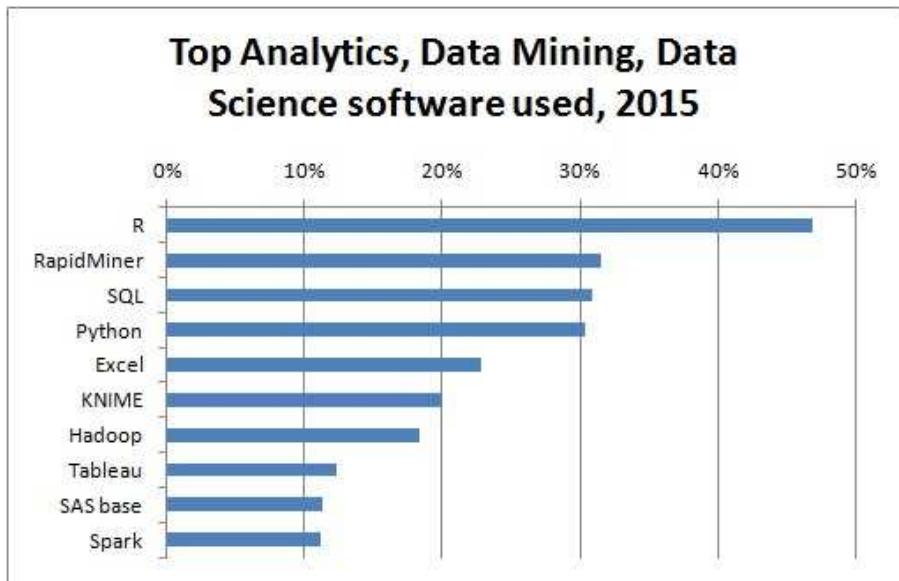


Figure 8.1: Top analytical tools for data science (source: <https://www.kdnuggets.com/2015/05/poll-r-rapidminer-python-big-data-spark.html>).

tool. In the recent years, Python is attracting more users, but R is still among the top data science tools.

We have implemented our proposed methods in 5 different R packages as follows:

- **fastCS**: implements various methods proposed for estimating clustered data with a covariance matrix with compound-symmetry structure.
- **fastAR1**: implements various methods proposed for estimating clustered data with a covariance matrix with AR(1) structure.

- **miscVSS**: implements various methods to perform vertical sample splitting. That includes both random and structured variations of this approach.
- **imi**: implements the iterative multiple imputation technique.
- **mifa**: implements our proposal for explanatory factor analysis for incomplete data using multiple imputation.

The source codes for all of these R packages are publicly and freely available via author's github page (<https://github.com/vahidnassiri>), and can easily be installed from there using the command `install_github` which is available via R package `devtools`. Therefore, one needs to first install this R package using the following command:

```
install.packages("devtools")
```

Once `devtools` is installed, one can use the following command to install any of these packages directly from R environment. Some of the packages are dependent on other R packages. Such dependencies can also be installed automatically in case the user does not already have them installed. For example, to install `fastCS` one can use the following command:

```
devtools::install_github("vahidnassiri/fastCS")
```

8.1 R package fastCS

The R package **fastCS** provides functions to:

- Estimate parameters of balanced clustered data with CS structure covariance matrix
- Combine estimated and their variance from different splits using:
 - ▷ parameter-free weights,
 - ▷ scalar weights,
 - ▷ optimal weights.
- Perform cluster by cluster analysis.

This covers our contributions in Section 4.1.

8.2 R package fastAR1

The R package **fastAR1** provides functions to:

- Estimate parameters of balanced clustered data with AR1 covariance matrix.
- Compute variance of the estimates above.
- Combine estimated parameters and their variances from different splits.

This covers our contributions in Section 4.2.

8.3 R package miscVSS

The R package `miscVSS` provides functions to:

- Efficient sub-sampling for random vertical splitting.
- Prepare data for structured vertical splitting.
- Combine the estimated parameters and variances from vertical splitting using appropriate combination rules.

This covers part of our contributions in Chapters 5, and 6.

8.4 R package imi

The R package `imi` provides functions to:

- Impute incomplete data and determine the number of sufficient imputed datasets using iterative multiple imputation idea for:
 - ▷ Linear models
 - ▷ Generalized linear models
 - ▷ Student's t -test
- Study the convergence of the procedure for a given number of imputed datasets.

- Visualize the convergence procedure and obtained results.
- Combine estimates and covariance matrices from multiple imputation using appropriate rules.

This covers our contributions in Section 7.1.

8.5 R package `mifa`

The R package `mifa` provides functions to:

- Impute the incomplete data, determine the number of sufficient imputed datasets, and perform exploratory factor analysis on them.
- Compute confidence interval for the proportion of explained variance for given numbers of factors using Fieller's method (Fieller, 1954).
- Compute confidence interval for the proportion of explained variance for given numbers of factors using bootstrap.
- Combine estimates and covariance matrices from multiple imputation using appropriate rules.

This covers our contributions in Section 7.2.

CHAPTER 9

CONCLUSIONS AND FUTURE PLAN

In this chapter we will summarize our work and describe how we could achieve the goals we have set for this PhD thesis. We will also draw some future research lines based on the results we have obtained and the methodologies we have developed.

9.1 Conclusions

Data Splitting has been considered, investigated, and developed in order to deal with analysis of large clustered data. Clustered data were considered to be large if

- the number of clusters becomes large,

- the size of some clusters becomes large,
- or, a combination of both.

We have considered four different splitting approaches: random and structured horizontal splitting that were useful when the number of clusters becomes large, also random and structured vertical splitting when the size of some clusters becomes large. For each case, efficient splitting strategies (sub-sampling) and combination rules have been derived. Two promises have been made to be kept for all the methodologies we have developed:

- While each methodology can deal with one situation, it should be easily possible to combine methodologies to deal with a combined situation.
- The splitting and combining steps of our methodology should be as independent as possible from the analyses step, so one can easily (or with a minor modification) use it for its desired analysis.

Using an example, we will illustrate how all different developed methodologies in this thesis can be combined to analyze large clustered data both at splitting and combining steps. First, let us describe our example.

Liver is responsible for concentrating and metabolizing a majority of medications, so it is a prime target for medication-induced damage. Drug-induced liver injury (DILI) is also one of the main reasons for drug withdrawal from the market. Therefore, detecting DILI as early as

possible during the drug development process is crucial. High content screening (HCS) is a modern technique to detect toxic compounds in an early stage (before the drug is on the market and its toxicity is realized because of injuries it causes to the organs of patients who take it).

HCS is an in vitro study that cells are incubated with various doses of different chemical compounds and then several outcomes of interest will be measured for these cells. In case of DILI, such outcomes of interest are parameters such as nuclei counts, nuclear area, plasma membrane integrity, lysosomal activity, mitochondrial membrane potential (MMP), and mitochondrial area. Now imagine we have 10,000 different chemical compounds, and for each of them at most 50 different doses are considered, and for each dose these 6 different outcomes of interest are measured. Therefore, the final dataset will have the form displayed in Table 9.1. This is a typical scheme for the data coming out of HCS studies, see e.g., Kaliyaperumal et al. (2018).

As one may see in Table 9.1, each chemical compound is a cluster for which 6 responses of interest are measured each for at most 50 doses. Therefore, we have 10,000 unbalanced clusters of size at most 300. Note that, being unbalanced is a common situation in practice, as different chemical compounds exhibit different safety windows, hence, considering different doses per compound is not out of ordinary.

Three immediate data splitting approaches that can be applied on this dataset are

- structured horizontal splitting to put all compounds with the same number of doses in one split,
- random horizontal splitting to split all the compounds of equal number of doses into smaller chunks,
- and, structured vertical splitting to model pairs of six outcomes instead of modeling them simultaneously.

Of course, if it is meaningful, one can even split the data at the dose level (random vertical splitting). But as one main parameter of interest in such dose-response data is the median effective dose (ED50), such a splitting would not be recommended in this situation. This is an important aspect of using data splitting in practice. One needs to consider splitting approaches that are in line with the structure of the data and the goal of the analysis.

As one may see, combining these three (or four) methodologies is an straightforward exercise at the splitting stage: each unit consists of measurements for a pair of responses, measured for a randomly selected subset of all compounds with the same number of doses. After fitting the models and estimating the parameters of interest (ED50's here), combining the combination steps is also straightforward. The only thing one needs to consider carefully is to begin the combination step from the most inner level of splitting.

The smallest sub-sample here consists of a random sample of all compounds with the same number of doses, measured for two responses of

interest. Therefore, the estimates can be combined using e.g., equal or proportional weights (to account for horizontal random splitting). Having all these estimates combined, we will obtain estimates from compounds with the same number of doses and each for a pair of responses of interest. For each pair, the estimates should be combined using e.g., size proportional weights (to account for structured horizontal splitting). At this stage, we have estimates corresponds to all possible pairs of responses. Now, we may apply multiple outputation combination rules (to account for structured vertical splitting).

As we have seen in this example, the splitting schemes and combination rules can be combined in a rather straightforward procedure and valid estimates could be obtained in a reasonable time. As each split in this procedure is completely independent of one another, the computation task is a so-called embarrassingly parallel task. That would make the job of distributing these tasks among different machines straightforward. Available facilities in R and other computational languages for parallel computation can easily be used to run these tasks in parallel loops. As it was discussed, this gain of computation time comes at the cost of losing a bit of efficiency. But in most of situations this is negligible, given the fact that data splitting is usually necessary when the sample size is large, hence each split is still large enough to provide valid results.

We also have considered special cases where the introduced combination rules would fail. Alternative solutions are proposed, and illustrated in terms of simulation studies and analyzing different datasets. Different

aspects of data splitting, such as determining number of sub-samples are also considered, discussed, and implemented.

9.2 Future research plan

As it was remarked in Section 9.1, data splitting is usually used when the sample size is large, however, this is not always the case. In fact, large and small datasets are suffering from the same issues but for different reasons. For example, a complicated model is difficult to get converged for both large and small datasets. For a large dataset, too many measurement makes achieving convergence difficult, while for small datasets lack of information given the complexity of the model is the cause. This said, we believe using data splitting one also can deal with issues of small clustered data.

Van der Elst et al. (2015) have shown that unbalancedness is a source of difficulty of convergence in case of linear mixed models. In fact, a smaller but balanced set of data would have a greater chance of convergence compared with a larger but highly unbalanced one. We believe, a technique like random vertical splitting can be used to create many balanced sub-samples of an unbalanced dataset. In other words, instead of analyzing small number of clusters that are highly unbalanced hence not converging, one may analyze many sub-sets of this dataset (taken with random vertical splitting technique) each consists of the same number of clusters but of smaller equal sizes.

Just to illustrate our idea for this immediate future research, we have analyzed the ARMD dataset (see Section 2.8) using random vertical splitting. The results are promising. As it was described in Section 2.8, this data come from a clinical trial in age-related macular degeneration (ARMD), which is a disease of the retina that causes severe central vision loss. The Pharmacological Therapy for Macular Degeneration Study Group (1997) conducted a multi-center study (17 centers) to evaluate the effect of an experimental treatment based on interferon- α in a group of patients who were randomly allocated to either placebo or interferon- α . The outcome of interest was the change in visual acuity over time. Using standard vision charts, the visual acuity was measured by the number of letters that were correctly read by the patient. Table 9.2 shows a frequency table of different cluster sizes in the ARMD dataset.

Burzykowski et al. (2006) and Alonso et al. (2015) analyzed this dataset in the context of surrogate endpoint evaluation. The goal of their analyses was to examine if visual acuity at week 24 (the so-called surrogate endpoint) could be an appropriate surrogate for the one at week 52, the so-called true endpoint. To this end, the surrogate and the true endpoints have to be modelled jointly. Because of the bivariate nature of the endpoint, coupled with the multi-centre nature of the study, a mixed model is used, by which surrogate evaluation measures are estimated; see also Buyse et al. (2000).

As it is clear from Table 9.2, the data are highly unbalanced, presenting the observed-likelihood model fitting procedure with serious convergence

issues. Van der Elst et al. (2015) proposed to treat these unbalanced data as an incomplete set, where the data in each centre are considered relative to the maximally observed centre size. MI can then be used to balance the data, i.e., to make all centres of size 18 in this case.

Here we propose to use random vertical splitting to create several almost-balanced datasets of smaller sizes (e.g., 5 or 8). The surrogate model used here is the same as the one described in Section A.15. When fitting the model with an unstructured covariance matrix for the random effects, as the sub-sampling size increases, the rate of convergence decreases. With a sub-sampling size 5 in about 70% of the times (out of 1000 sub-samples) the model could converge, while if we increase the sub-sampling size to 8 the convergence rate drops to 20%. Considering unstructured covariance matrices, the model cannot be converged using full maximum likelihood. In order to evaluate random vertical splitting, we would consider a model with uncorrelated random effects where a full likelihood can also be fitted.

As we may see in Table 9.3, except for d_2 , for other parameters we get an estimate close to the ones obtained using full maximum likelihood. Of course, this is a first experiment with this idea. More theoretical work as well as simulation studies are required to establish a solid framework for this case.

Other than extending data splitting to be used to deal with small-sample issues, our other immediate plan to extend this work is to implement a unified R package for all types of splitting and combination rules

together with parallel computing possibilities to be distributed on several machines. This sounds like to be the next natural step to take. As they are all implemented separately. Also, given the embarrassingly parallel nature of our proposed methodology, implementing parallel computing is rather straightforward.

Table 9.1: Data structure of high content screening study of DILI responses.

Response of interest	Dose	Compound 1	...	Compound 10,000
nuclei counts	Dose1	.	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose20	-	.	.
	Dose21	-	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose50	.	.	.
nuclear area	Dose1	.	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose20	-	.	.
	Dose21	-	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose50	.	.	.
plasma membrane integrity	Dose1	.	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose20	-	.	.
	Dose21	-	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose50	.	.	.
plasma membrane integrity	Dose1	.	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose20	-	.	.
	Dose21	-	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose50	.	.	.
lysosomal activity	Dose1	.	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose20	-	.	.
	Dose21	-	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose50	.	.	.
mitochondrial membrane potential	Dose1	.	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose20	-	.	.
	Dose21	-	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose50	.	.	.
mitochondrial area	Dose1	.	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose20	-	.	.
	Dose21	-	.	.
	:	.	.	.
	Dose50	.	.	.

Table 9.2: ARMD data. Frequency of centres based on the number of patients.

Number of patients	5	6	7	8	9	18
Number of centres	7	2	4	1	2	1

Table 9.3: Mean (standard deviation) of the estimates for the variance components and fixed effects in the converged sub-samples of random vertical splitting (with sub-sampling size 5 and 8), and full data maximum likelihood with independent random effects and constant variance for the error. d_1 and d_2 are the diagonal elements of the random effects covariance matrix, σ^2 is the error variance. 1 and -1 are the fixed effects corresponding to true and surrogate endpoints, respectively. Also, $Z * 1$ and $Z * -1$ are the effect of treatment on true and surrogate endpoints, respectively.

	$M = 5$	$M = 8$	Full likelihood
d_1	9.537 (8.740)	11.147 (3.519)	8.943
d_2	3.031 (5.284)	1.692 (3.113)	7.751
σ^2	186.401 (16.202)	189.351 (7.0512)	188.508
-1	-7.592 (0.656)	-7.502 (0.320)	-7.536
1	-14.169 (0.751)	-13.943 (0.348)	-14.121
$Z * -1$	-1.513 (0.697)	-1.458 (0.312)	-1.091
$Z * 1$	-1.820 (0.739)	-1.687 (0.332)	-1.234

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- K. Aas, C. Czado, A. Frigessi, and H. Bakken. Pair-copula constructions of multiple dependence. *Insurance: Mathematics and economics*, 44(2):182–198, 2009.
- M. Aerts, G. Molenberghs, L. M. Ryan, and H. Geys. *Topics in modelling of clustered data*. CRC Press, 2002.
- M. Aerts, C. Faes, N. Hens, O. Loquiha, and G. Molenberghs. Incomplete clustered data and non-ignorable cluster size. In *Proceedings of the 26th International Workshop on Statistical Modelling. València, Spain*, pages 35–40, 2011.
- A. Alonso, H. Geys, G. Molenberghs, M. G. Kenward, and T. Vangeneugden. Validation of surrogate markers in multiple randomized clinical

- trials with repeated measurements: canonical correlation approach. *Biometrics*, 60(4):845–853, 2004.
- A. Alonso, W. Van der Elst, G. Molenberghs, M. Buyse, and T. Burzykowski. "On the relationship between the causal-inference and meta-analytic paradigms for the validation of surrogate endpoints". *Biometrics*, 71:15–24, 2015.
- T. W. Anderson. Asymptotic theory for principal component analysis. *The Annals of Mathematical Statistics*, 34(1):122–148, 1963.
- B. C. Arnold and D. Strauss. Pseudolikelihood estimation: some examples. *Sankhyā: The Indian Journal of Statistics, Series B*, pages 233–243, 1991.
- M. Bartlett. The approximate recovery of information from replicated field experiments with large blocks. *The Journal of Agricultural Science*, 28(3):418–427, 1938.
- M. Bartlett. Further analysis of spatial patterns: A re-examination of the papadakis method of improving the accuracy of randomized block experiments. *Advances in Applied Probability*, 10:133–143, 1978.
- M. S. Bartlett. *The statistical analysis of spatial pattern*. London: Chapman & Hall, 1976.
- D. Basu. On statistics independent of a complete sufficient statistic. *Sankhyā: The Indian Journal of Statistics (1933-1960)*, 15(4):377–380, 1955.

- E. Benhin, J. Rao, and A. Scott. Mean estimating equation approach to analysing cluster-correlated data with nonignorable cluster sizes. *Biometrika*, 92(2):435–450, 2005.
- B. Berckmoes, R. Lowen, and J. Van Casteren. Stein’s method and a quantitative lindeberg clt for the fourier transforms of random vectors. *Journal of Mathematical Analysis and Applications*, 433(2):1441–1458, 2016.
- T. E. Bodner. ”What improves with increased missing data imputations?”. *Structural Equation Modeling*, 15:651–675, 2008.
- T. Burzykowski, G. Molenberghs, and M. Buyse. *The evaluation of surrogate endpoints*. Springer Science & Business Media, 2006.
- M. Buyse, G. Molenberghs, T. Burzykowski, D. Renard, and H. Geys. ”The validation of surrogate endpoints in meta-analyses of randomized experiments”. *Biostatistics*, 1:49–67, 2000.
- J. Carpenter and M. Kenward. *Multiple imputation and its application*. John Wiley & Sons, 2012.
- J. R. Carpenter and M. G. Kenward. ”Missing data in clinical trials: practical guide”. *National Institute for Health Research, Publication RM03/JH17/MK: Birmingham*, 2008.
- G. Casella and R. L. Berger. *Statistical inference*, volume 2. Duxbury Pacific Grove, CA, 2002.

- P. J. Catalano and L. M. Ryan. Bivariate latent variable models for clustered discrete and continuous outcomes. *Journal of the American Statistical Association*, 87(419):651–658, 1992.
- C.-T. Chiang and K.-Y. Lee. Efficient estimation methods for informative cluster size data. *Statistica Sinica*, pages 121–133, 2008.
- W. G. Cochran, C. I. Bliss, et al. Discriminant functions with covariance. *The Annals of Mathematical Statistics*, 19(2):151–176, 1948.
- X. J. Cong, G. Yin, and Y. Shen. Marginal analysis of correlated failure time data with informative cluster sizes. *Biometrics*, 63(3):663–672, 2007.
- J. Dean and S. Ghemawat. Mapreduce: simplified data processing on large clusters. *Communications of the ACM*, 51(1):107–113, 2008.
- J. J. Denissen, R. Geenen, M. A. Van Aken, S. D. Gosling, and J. Potter. Development and validation of a dutch translation of the big five inventory (bfi). *Journal of personality assessment*, 90:152–157, 2008.
- D. L. Donoho et al. High-dimensional data analysis: The curses and blessings of dimensionality. *AMS math challenges lecture*, 1(32):375, 2000.
- S. Dray and J. Josse. Principal component analysis with missing values: a comparative survey of methods. *Plant Ecology*, 216(5):657–667, 2015.

- B. Efron. Nonparametric estimates of standard error: the jackknife, the bootstrap and other methods. *Biometrika*, 68(3):589–599, 1981.
- C. K. Enders. *Applied missing data analysis*. Guilford Press, 2010.
- C. Faes, G. Molenberghs, M. Aerts, G. Verbeke, and M. G. Kenward. The effective sample size and an alternative small-sample degrees-of-freedom method. *The American Statistician*, 63(4):389–399, 2009.
- K. Fan. On a theorem of Weyl concerning eigenvalues of linear transformations i. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, 35: 652–655, 1949.
- Z. Feng, P. Diehr, A. Peterson, and D. McLerran. Selected statistical issues in group randomized trials. *Annual review of public health*, 22 (1):167–187, 2001.
- E. C. Fieller. Some problems in interval estimation. *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society. Series B (Methodological)*, pages 175–185, 1954.
- S. Fieuws. A sas macro for fitting a multivariate generalised linear mixed model using the pairwise approach, 2006a. <https://ibiostat.be/online-resources/online-resources/longitudinal>.
- S. Fieuws. A sas macro for fitting a multivariate linear mixed model using the pairwise approach, 2006b. URL <https://ibiostat.be/online-resources/online-resources/longitudinal>.
- S. Fieuws and G. Verbeke. ”pairwise fitting of mixed models for the

- joint modeling of multivariate longitudinal profiles". *Biometrics*, 62(2):424–431, 2006. ISSN 0006-341X.
- S. Fieuws, G. Verbeke, F. Boen, and C. Delecluse. High dimensional multivariate mixed models for binary questionnaire data. *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society: Series C (Applied Statistics)*, 55(4):449–460, 2006.
- S. Fieuws, G. Verbeke, and G. Molenberghs. Random-effects models for multivariate repeated measures. *Statistical methods in medical research*, 16(5):387–397, 2007.
- M. A. Flower, J. Marincola, et al. *Herodotus: Histories*. Cambridge University Press, 2002.
- D. Follmann, M. Proschan, and E. Leifer. Multiple outputation: inference for complex clustered data by averaging analyses from independent data. *Biometrics*, 59:420–429, 2003.
- R. Franci and L. T. Rigatelli. *Storia della teoria delle equazioni algebriche*, volume 40. Ugo Mursia Editore, 1979.
- K. R. Gabriel and S. Zamir. Lower rank approximation of matrices by least squares with any choice of weights. *Technometrics*, 21(4):489–498, 1979.
- F. Gotze. On the rate of convergence in the multivariate clt. *The Annals of Probability*, pages 724–739, 1991.

- J. W. Graham, A. E. Olchowski, and T. D. Gilreath. "How many imputations are really needed? some practical clarifications of multiple imputation theory". *Prevention Science*, 8:206–213, 2007.
- L. Guittet, B. Giraudeau, and P. Ravaud. A priori postulated and real power in cluster randomized trials: mind the gap. *BMC Medical Research Methodology*, 5(1):1, 2005.
- D. Hamel. *Reading Herodotus: a guided tour through the wild boars, dancing suitors, and crazy tyrants of the history*. JHU Press, 2012.
- O. Harel and J. Schafer. "Multiple imputation in two stages". In *Proceedings of Federal Committee on Statistical Methodology 2003 Conference*, 2003.
- D. A. Harville. *Matrix algebra from a statistician's perspective*. Springerverlag, New York, 1997.
- K. Hemming, A. J. Girling, A. J. Sitch, J. Marsh, and R. J. Lilford. Sample size calculations for cluster randomised controlled trials with a fixed number of clusters. *BMC medical research methodology*, 11(1): 1, 2011.
- L. Hermans. Inference with unequal cluster sizes, 2019. URL <https://ibiostat.be/publications/phd/lisahermans.pdf>.
- L. Hermans, G. Molenberghs, M. Aerts, M. G. Kenward, and G. Verbeke. A tutorial on the practical use and implication of complete sufficient statistics. *International Statistical Review*, 86(3):403–414, 2018a.

- L. Hermans, V. Nassiri, G. Molenberghs, M. G. Kenward, W. Van der Elst, M. Aerts, and G. Verbeke. Fast, closed-form, and efficient estimators for hierarchical models with ar (1) covariance and unequal cluster sizes. *Communications in Statistics-Simulation and Computation*, 47(5):1492–1505, 2018b.
- L. Hermans, V. Nassiri, G. Molenberghs, M. G. Kenward, W. Van der Elst, M. Aerts, and G. Verbeke. "clusters with unequal size: Maximum likelihood versus weighted estimation in large samples". *Statistica Sinica*, (In Press), 2018c.
- E. B. Hoffman, P. K. Sen, and C. R. Weinberg. Within-cluster resampling. *Biometrika*, 88:1121–1134, 2001.
- A. Ilin and T. Raiko. Practical approaches to principal component analysis in the presence of missing values. *The Journal of Machine Learning Research*, 11:1957–2000, 2010.
- A. Ivanova, G. Molenberghs, and G. Verbeke. Fast and highly efficient pseudo-likelihood methodology for large and complex ordinal data. *Statistical methods in medical research*, 26(6):2758–2779, 2017.
- O. P. John and S. Srivastava. The big five trait taxonomy: History, measurement, and theoretical perspectives. *Handbook of personality: Theory and research*, 2(1999):102–138, 1999.
- R. A. Johnson and D. W. Wichern. *Applied multivariate statistical analysis*, volume 4. Prentice hall Englewood Cliffs, NJ, 1992.

- J. Josse, F. Husson, and J. Pagès. Gestion des données manquantes en analyse en composantes principales. *Journal de la Société Française de Statistique*, 150(2):28–51, 2009.
- J. Josse, J. Pagès, and F. Husson. Multiple imputation in principal component analysis. *Advances in data analysis and classification*, 5(3):231–246, 2011.
- K. Kaliyaperumal, J. I. Grove, R. M. Delahay, W. J. Griffiths, A. Duckworth, and G. P. Aithal. Pharmacogenomics of drug-induced liver injury (dili): molecular biology to clinical applications. *Journal of hepatology*, 69(4):948–957, 2018.
- M. G. Kenward. *An Investigation of Certain Methods for the Analysis of Repeated Measurements*. Reading, UK: Unpublished PhD thesis, 1981.
- H. A. Kiers. Weighted least squares fitting using ordinary least squares algorithms. *Psychometrika*, 62(2):251–266, 1997.
- T. Koopmans. Serial correlation and quadratic forms in normal variables. *The Annals of Mathematical Statistics*, 13(1):14–33, 1942.
- M. G. Kundu. Implementation of pairwise fitting technique for analyzing multivariate longitudinal data in sas. In *PharmaSUG 2011 Conference Proceedings*, 2011.
- N. M. Laird, J. H. Ware, et al. Random-effects models for longitudinal data. *Biometrics*, 38(4):963–974, 1982.

- N. Lange and N. M. Laird. The effect of covariance structure on variance estimation in balanced growth-curve models with random parameters. *Journal of the American Statistical Association*, 84(405):241–247, 1989.
- R. Larsen and R. T. Warne. Estimating confidence intervals for eigenvalues in exploratory factor analysis. *Behavior research methods*, 42(3):871–876, 2010.
- K.-H. Li, X.-L. Meng, T. E. Raghunathan, and D. B. Rubin. "Significance levels from repeated p -values with multiply-imputed data". *Statistica Sinica*, pages 65–92, 1991.
- R. J. Little. "Missing-data adjustments in large surveys". *Journal of Business & Economic Statistics*, 6:287–296, 1988.
- A. Liu and W. Hall. Unbiased estimation following a group sequential test. *Biometrika*, 86(1):71–78, 1999.
- A. Liu, W. Hall, K. F. Yu, and C. Wu. Estimation following a group sequential test for distributions in the one-parameter exponential family. *Statistica Sinica*, pages 165–181, 2006.
- U. Lorenzo-Seva and J. R. Van Ginkel. Multiple imputation of missing values in exploratory factor analysis of multidimensional scales: estimating latent trait scores. *Anales de Psicología/Annals of Psychology*, 32(2):596–608, 2016.
- A. Lovik, V. Nassiri, G. Verbeke, and G. Molenberghs. Combining factors from different factor analyses based on factor congruence.

- In *The Annual Meeting of the Psychometric Society*, pages 211–219. Springer, 2017a.
- A. Lovik, V. Nassiri, G. Verbeke, G. Molenberghs, and A. K. Sodermans. Psychometric properties and comparison of different techniques for factor analysis on the big five inventory from a flemish sample. *Personality and Individual Differences*, 117:122–129, 2017b.
- A. Lovik, V. Nassiri, G. Verbeke, G. Molenberghs, and A. K. Sodermans. Psychometric properties and comparison of different ways of factor analysis of the big five inventory on a flemish sample. In *14th European Conference on Psychological Assessment, Date: 2017/07/05-2017/07/08, Location: Lisbon, Portugal*, 2017c.
- K. Lu. "Number of imputations needed to stabilize estimated treatment difference in longitudinal data analysis". *Statistical Methods in Medical Research*, pages 1–17, 2014.
- P. C. Mahalanobis. "On the generalized distance in statistics". *Proceedings of the National Institute of Sciences*, 2:49–55, 1936.
- K. Mardia, J. Kent, and J. Bibby. Multivariate analysis. *Probability and mathematical statistics*. Academic Press Inc, 1979.
- R. Martin. *Papadakis method*. Encyclopedia of Statistical Science, series 9, 2006.
- N. Matloff. Software alchemy: turning complex statistical computations

- into embarrassingly-parallel ones. *arXiv preprint arXiv:1409.5827*, 2014.
- J. McAuley. Amazon product data, 2016. URL <http://jmcauley.ucsd.edu/data/amazon/>.
- E. Milanzi, A. Alonso, C. Buyck, G. Molenberghs, L. Bijnens, et al. A permutational-splitting sample procedure to quantify expert opinion on clusters of chemical compounds using high-dimensional data. *The Annals of Applied Statistics*, 8(4):2319–2335, 2014.
- E. Milanzi, G. Molenberghs, A. Alonso, M. G. Kenward, A. A. Tsiatis, M. Davidian, and G. Verbeke. Estimation after a group sequential trial. *Statistics in biosciences*, 7(2):187–205, 2015.
- E. Milanzi, G. Molenberghs, A. Alonso, M. G. Kenward, G. Verbeke, A. A. Tsiatis, and M. Davidian. Properties of estimators in exponential family settings with observation-based stopping rules. *Journal of biometrics & biostatistics*, 7(1), 2016.
- G. Molenberghs and G. Verbeke. *Models for discrete longitudinal data*. 2005.
- G. Molenberghs, G. Verbeke, and S. Iddi. "Pseudo-likelihood methodology for partitioned large and complex samples". *Statist. Probab. Lett.*, 81:892–901, 2011. ISSN 0167-7152.
- G. Molenberghs, M. G. Kenward, M. Aerts, G. Verbeke, A. A. Tsiatis, M. Davidian, and D. Rizopoulos. On random sample size, ignorability,

- ancillarity, completeness, separability, and degeneracy: Sequential trials, random sample sizes, and missing data. *Statistical Methods in Medical Research*, 23(1):11–41, 2014.
- D. Mortelmans, I. Pasteels, J. Van Bavel, P. Bracke, K. Matthijs, and C. Van Peer. Divorce in flanders. Data collection and code book. *Retrieved September, 22:2012, 2011.*
- V. Nassiri. *Robust alternatives to least squares for sparse estimation with applications*. PhD thesis, PhD thesis, Vrije Universiteit Brussel (VUB), 2013.
- V. Nassiri, G. Molenberghs, and G. Verbeke. Finite information limit variance-covariance structures: Is the entire dataset needed for analysis? In *High Performance Computing & Simulation (HPCS), 2016 International Conference on*, pages 736–742. IEEE, 2016.
- W. Neiswanger, C. Wang, and E. Xing. Asymptotically exact, embarrassingly parallel mcmc. *arXiv preprint arXiv:1311.4780*, 2013.
- R. B. Nelsen. *An introduction to copulas*. Springer Science & Business Media, 2007.
- M. Otava, Z. Shkedy, D. Lin, H. W. Göhlmann, L. Bijnens, W. Talloen, and A. Kasim. Dose-response modeling under simple order restrictions using bayesian variable selection methods. *Statistics in Biopharmaceutical Research*, 6(3):252–262, 2014.

- J. Papadakis. Méthode statistique pour des expériences sur champ. *Bull. Inst. Amel. Plantes a Salonique*, 23:13–29, 1937.
- Y. Pawitan and S. Self. Modeling disease marker processes in aids. *Journal of the American Statistical Association*, 88(423):719–726, 1993.
- J. C. Pinheiro and D. M. Bates. Approximations to the log-likelihood function in the nonlinear mixed-effects model. *Journal of computational and Graphical Statistics*, 4(1):12–35, 1995.
- L. A. Pinto, K. Willekens, K. Van Keer, A. Shibesh, E. Vandewalle, G. Molenberghs, and I. Stalmans. Leuven eye study-baseline and methods. *Acta Ophthalmologica*, 93, 2015.
- C. J. Price, C. A. Kimmel, R. W. Tyl, and M. C. Marr. The developmental toxicity of ethylene glycol in rats and mice. *Toxicology and Applied Pharmacology*, 81(1):113–127, 1985.
- C. J. Price, C. A. Kimmel, J. D. George, and M. C. Marr. The developmental toxicity of diethylene glycol dimethyl ether in mice. *Fundamental and applied toxicology*, 8(1):115–126, 1987.
- A. Robitzsch, S. Grund, and T. Henke. Miceadds: Some additional multiple imputation functions, especially for 'mice', 2016. URL <https://cran.r-project.org/web/‘s/miceadds/index.html>.
- P. Royston. "Multiple imputation of missing values". *Stata Journal*, 4: 227–41, 2004.

- P. Royston, J. B. Carlin, I. R. White, et al. Multiple imputation of missing values: new features for mim. *Stata Journal*, 9(2):252, 2009.
- D. Rubin. "Illustrating the use of multiple imputations to handle non-response in sample surveys". *Bulletin of the International Statistical Institute*, 48:517–532, 1979.
- D. Rubin and R. Little. *Statistical Analysis With Missing Data (2nd ed.)*. New York, John Wiley & Sons, 2002.
- D. B. Rubin. "Multiple imputations in sample surveys-a phenomenological bayesian approach to nonresponse". In *Proceedings of the survey research methods section of the American Statistical Association*, volume 1, pages 20–34. American Statistical Association, 1978.
- D. B. Rubin. *Multiple imputation for nonresponse in surveys*. John Wiley & Sons, New York, 1987.
- D. B. Rubin. "The design of a general and flexible system for handling nonresponse in sample surveys". *The American Statistician*, 58:298–302, 2004.
- D. B. Rubin and N. Schenker. "Multiple imputation for interval estimation from simple random samples with ignorable nonresponse". *Journal of the American Statistical Association*, 81:366–374, 1986.
- D. Ruppert, M. P. Wand, and R. J. Carroll. *Semiparametric regression*. Number 12. Cambridge university press, 2003.

- J. Schafer. *Analysis of incomplete multivariate data*. London, Chapman & Hall, 1997.
- R. Schouten, P. Lugtig, J. Brand, and G. Vink. Multivariate amputation using ampute, 2017. <https://cran.r-project.org/web/packages/mice/vignettes/ampute.html>.
- R. M. Schouten, P. Lugtig, and G. Vink. Generating missing values for simulation purposes: a multivariate amputation procedure. *Journal of Statistical Computation and Simulation*, pages 1–22, 2018.
- S. L. Scott, A. W. Blocker, F. V. Bonassi, H. A. Chipman, E. I. George, and R. E. McCulloch. Bayes and big data: The consensus monte carlo algorithm. *International Journal of Management Science and Engineering Management*, 11(2):78–88, 2016.
- S. Shelbey. *CRC standard mathematical tables and formulae*. Boca Raton: CRC Press, 1975.
- N. Shock, R. Greulich, R. Anders, D. Arenberg, P. Consta, E. Lakatta, and J. Tobin. *Normal human aging: The Baltimore longitudinal study of aging*. National Institute of Health Publication 84–2450. Washington, DC: National Institute of Health, 1984.
- K. Sikorska, E. Lesaffre, P. F. Groenen, and P. H. Eilers. Gwas on your notebook: fast semi-parallel linear and logistic regression for genome-wide association studies. *BMC bioinformatics*, 14(1):166, 2013a.

- K. Sikorska, F. Rivadeneira, P. J. Groenen, A. Hofman, A. G. Uitterlinden, P. H. Eilers, and E. Lesaffre. Fast linear mixed model computations for genome-wide association studies with longitudinal data. *Statistics in medicine*, 32(1):165–180, 2013b.
- S. Teerenstra, M. Moerbeek, T. van Achterberg, B. J. Pelzer, and G. F. Borm. Sample size calculations for 3-level cluster randomized trials. *Clinical Trials*, 5(5):486–495, 2008.
- S. Teerenstra, B. Lu, J. S. Preisser, T. Van Achterberg, and G. F. Borm. Sample size considerations for gee analyses of three-level cluster randomized trials. *Biometrics*, 66(4):1230–1237, 2010.
- J. M. Ten Berge. Orthogonal procrustes rotation for two or more matrices. *Psychometrika*, 42(2):267–276, 1977.
- The Pharmacological Therapy for Macular Degeneration Study Group. "Interferon alfa-2a is ineffective for patients with choroidal neovascularization secondary to age-related macular degeneration: results of a prospective randomized placebo-controlled clinical trial". *Archives of Ophthalmology*, 115:865, 1997.
- R. W. Tyl, C. J. Price, M. C. Marr, and C. A. Kimmel. Developmental toxicity evaluation of dietary di (2-ethylhexyl) phthalate in fischer 344 rats and cd-1 mice. *Toxicological Sciences*, 10(3):395–412, 1988.
- S. van Buuren. "Multiple imputation of discrete and continuous data by fully conditional specification". *Statistical Methods in Medical Research*, 16:219–242, 2007.

- S. van Buuren. *Flexible Imputation of Missing Data*. Chapman & Hall/CRC, Boca Raton, 2012.
- S. van Buuren and K. Groothuis-Oudshoorn. "MICE: Multivariate imputation by chained equations in R". *Journal of Statistical Software*, 45, 2011.
- S. van Buuren, J. P. Brand, C. Groothuis-Oudshoorn, and D. B. Rubin. Fully conditional specification in multivariate imputation. *Journal of statistical computation and simulation*, 76:1049–1064, 2006.
- W. Van der Elst, L. Hermans, G. Verbeke, M. Kenward, V. Nassiri, and G. Molenberghs. "Unbalanced cluster sizes and rates of convergence in mixed-effects models for clustered data". *Journal of Statistical Computation and Simulation*, 86:1–17, 2015.
- W. Van der Elst, P. Meyvisch, A. Alonso, H. M. Ensor, C. J. Weir, and G. Molenberghs. "Package ‘Surrogate’: Evaluation of Surrogate Endpoints in Clinical Trials", 2016. URL <https://cran.r-project.org/web/packages/Surrogate>.
- G. Verbeke and S. Fieuws. The effect of miss-specified baseline characteristics on inference for longitudinal trends in linear mixed models. *Biostatistics*, 8(4):772–783, 2007.
- G. Verbeke and G. Molenberghs. *Linear mixed models for longitudinal data*. Springer Series in Statistics. Springer-Verlag, New York, 2000.

- A. P. Verbyla, B. R. Cullis, M. G. Kenward, and S. J. Welham. The analysis of designed experiments and longitudinal data by using smoothing splines. *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society: Series C (Applied Statistics)*, 48(3):269–311, 1999.
- A. Verdonck, L. De Ridder, G. Verbeke, J. Bourguignon, C. Carels, E. Kühn, V. Darras, and F. de Zegher. Comparative effects of neonatal and prepubertal castration on craniofacial growth in rats. *Archives of oral biology*, 43(11):861–871, 1998.
- G. Vink, L. E. Frank, J. Pannekoek, and S. Buuren. Predictive mean matching imputation of semicontinuous variables. *Statistica Neerlandica*, 68(1):61–90, 2014.
- D. A. Wagstaff, O. Harel, et al. ”A closer examination of three small-sample approximations to the multiple-imputation degrees of freedom”. *Stata Journal*, 11:403–419, 2011.
- A. Wald. Contributions to the theory of statistical estimation and testing hypotheses. *The Annals of Mathematical Statistics*, 10(4):299–326, 1939.
- M. Wang, M. Kong, and S. Datta. Inference for marginal linear models for clustered longitudinal data with potentially informative cluster sizes. *Statistical Methods in Medical Research*, 20(4):347–367, 2011.
- I. R. White, P. Royston, and A. M. Wood. Multiple imputation using chained equations: issues and guidance for practice. *Statistics in medicine*, 30(4):377–399, 2011.

- H. Wickham et al. The split-apply-combine strategy for data analysis. *Journal of Statistical Software*, 40(1):1–29, 2011.
- J. M. Williamson, S. Datta, and G. A. Satten. Marginal analyses of clustered data when cluster size is informative. *Biometrics*, 59(1):36–42, 2003.
- H. Wold and E. Lyttkens. Nonlinear iterative partial least squares (nipals) estimation procedures. *Bulletin of the International Statistical Institute*, 43(1):29–47, 1969.
- S. L. Zeger and K.-Y. Liang. Longitudinal data analysis for discrete and continuous outcomes. *Biometrics*, pages 121–130, 1986.

PROFESSIONAL BACKGROUND

Vahid Nassiri has obtained a Bachelor in Statistics (2002) from the Shahid Beheshti University in Tehran, Iran, and a Master in Mathematical Statistics (2008) from the Amirkabir University of Technology in Tehran, Iran. Afterwards, he has obtained a PhD in Applied Mathematics (2013) from Vrije Universiteit Brussel (VUB), Brussels, Belgium. His main research interests are in the field of Big Data and High-dimensional problems. While working on the sparse estimation of high-dimensional linear models in the sense of least squares and quantile regression in his former PhD, his current work is concerned on the fast computation of models for correlated data with possible missing values. His research expertise is mainly concerned with analyzing incomplete big correlated data using mixed models, multiple imputation, penalized likelihood, and related topics. He also has experience in consulting involving projects from pharmacology, biology, medicine, engineering, psychology, sociology, linguistics, and market research. He is now working as a statistical consultant at Open Analytics NV, Antwerp, Belgium.

APPENDICES

In this chapter supplementary materials from different chapters are presented. Sections A.1–A.8 will provide materials related to Section 4.1 (structured horizontal splitting for CS). The materials related to Section 4.2 (structured horizontal splitting for AR1) will be given in Sections A.9–A.11. The Fieller’s method and delta method are explained in Section A.12. The combination rules for random vertical splitting for a CS case will be derived in Section A.13. In Section A.14, combination rules of multiple imputation for p -values are given. And finally, the surrogate model we have used in thesis is presented in Section A.15.

A.1 Incompleteness in the compound-symmetry model

Based on (4.1) and the multiplicity of the cluster sizes, the sufficient statistics are:

$$W_{1k} = \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \sum_{j=1}^{n_k} Y_{ij}^{(k)}, \quad (\text{A.1.1})$$

$$W_2 = \sum_{k=1}^L \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \sum_{j=1}^{n_k} \left(Y_{ij}^{(k)} \right)^2, \quad (\text{A.1.2})$$

$$W_{3k} = \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \left(\sum_{j=1}^{n_k} Y_{ij}^{(k)} \right)^2, \quad (\text{A.1.3})$$

$$W_{4k} = c_k. \quad (\text{A.1.4})$$

The conditional and marginal expectations of (A.1.1)–(A.1.4) are:

$$E(W_{1k}|c_k) = c_k n_k \mu,$$

$$E(W_{1k}) = N \mu \pi_k n_k,$$

$$E(W_2|c_k) = \sum_{k=1}^L c_k n_k (\sigma^2 + d + \mu^2),$$

$$E(W_2) = N(\sigma^2 + d + \mu^2) \sum_{k=1}^L \pi_k n_k,$$

$$E(W_{3k}|c_k) = c_k \left\{ n_k (\sigma^2 + d + \mu^2) + n_k (n_k - 1) (d + \mu^2) \right\},$$

$$E(W_{3k}) = N \pi_k n_k \left\{ (\sigma^2 + d + \mu^2) + (n_k - 1) (d + \mu^2) \right\},$$

$$E(W_{4k}) = N \pi_k.$$

Group all sufficient statistics in \mathbf{W} and define a function

$$g(\mathbf{w}) = \sum_{k=1}^L \lambda_k \frac{w_{1k}}{w_{4k}}. \quad (\text{A.1.5})$$

Then,

$$E\{g(\mathbf{W}|\mathbf{W}_4)\} = \sum_{k=1}^L \lambda_k \frac{E(W_{1k}|W_{4k})}{W_{4k}} = \mu \sum_{k=1}^L \lambda_k n_k,$$

and hence

$$E\{g(\mathbf{W})\} = \mu \sum_{k=1}^K \lambda_k n_k.$$

Thus, every solution $\boldsymbol{\lambda} \perp \mathbf{n}$, where $\mathbf{n} = (n_1, \dots, n_K)'$, provides a counterexample, establishing incompleteness.

Such a vector $\boldsymbol{\lambda}$ exists if and only if $K \geq 2$, for which it is assumed that at least two $c_k > 0$ (i.e., at least two different cluster sizes occur).

A.2 Likelihood-based estimation of the CS model

A.2.1 Score functions

The score function has components:

$$\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \mu_k} = \frac{1}{\sigma_k^2 + n_k d_k} \left(\sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \sum_{j=1}^{n_1} y_{ij}^{(k)} - c_k n_k \mu_k \right), \quad (\text{A.2.1})$$

$$\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \sigma_k^2} = \frac{-c_k n_k}{2\sigma_k^2} \cdot \frac{\sigma_k^2 + (n_k - 1)d_k}{\sigma_k^2 + n_k d_k} + \frac{c_k n_k S_k}{2\sigma_k^4} \quad (\text{A.2.2})$$

$$- \frac{d_k (2\sigma_k^2 + n_k d_k) c_k n_k T_k}{2\sigma_k^4 (\sigma_k^2 + n_k d_k)^2}, \quad (\text{A.2.3})$$

$$\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial d_k} = \frac{-c_k n_k}{2(\sigma_k^2 + n_k d_k)} + \frac{c_k n_k T_k}{2(\sigma_k^2 + n_k d_k)^2}, \quad (\text{A.2.4})$$

with

$$S_k = \frac{1}{c_k n_k} Q_k = \frac{1}{c_k n_k} \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)'} \mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)}, \quad (\text{A.2.5})$$

$$T_k = \frac{1}{c_k n_k} R_k = \frac{1}{c_k n_k} \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)'} \mathbf{J}_{\mathbf{n}_k} \mathbf{Z}_i^{(k)}. \quad (\text{A.2.6})$$

A.2.2 Lack of closed-form solution when $K \geq 2$

The lack of a closed form when $K \geq 2$ is well known, but we highlight a few relevant features here. More detail is given in Supplementary Materials A.3. Function (4.4) can be turned into the log-likelihood kernel for the conventional situation where there is a common mean

parameter and common variance components across all cluster sizes, i.e., $\ell(\mu, \sigma^2, d)$. The score functions follow from summing the terms in (A.2.1)–(A.2.4) across cluster sizes:

$$\begin{aligned}\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \mu} &= \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \mu_k} \Big|_{\mu_k=\mu}, \\ \frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \sigma^2} &= \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \sigma_k^2} \Big|_{\sigma_k^2=\sigma^2}, \\ \frac{\partial \ell}{\partial d} &= \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{\partial \ell}{\partial d_k} \Big|_{d_k=d}.\end{aligned}\tag{A.2.7}$$

Solving the score equation in (A.2.7) for the mean, using that

$$\Sigma_{n_k}^{-1} = \frac{1}{\sigma^2} I_{n_k} - \frac{d}{\sigma^2(\sigma^2 + n_k d)} J_{n_k},$$

leads to the identity:

$$\hat{\mu} = \frac{\sum_{k=1}^K \frac{n_k c_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d} \bar{Y}^{(k)}}{\sum_{k=1}^K \frac{n_k c_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d}} = \frac{\sum_{k=1}^K \frac{n_k c_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d} \widehat{\mu}_k}{\sum_{k=1}^K \frac{n_k c_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d}},\tag{A.2.8}$$

where $\widehat{\mu}_k$ as in (4.5). For the variance components, only implicit identities follow; they are functions of (A.2.5)–(A.2.6). These take the form of high-degree polynomials, for which no general explicit solution exists. While (A.2.8) is explicit, it is a weighted average of the cluster-size specific averages $\bar{Y}^{(k)}$, with weights depending on the variance components. This, combined with the result for the variance components, implies that there is no explicit solution, unless the variance components are known or the

cluster size is constant.

A.3 Full likelihood

Referring to the conventional situations, i.e. $\ell(\mu, \sigma^2, d)$ in (4.2) and the score equation in (A.2.7), also second derivatives can be calculated:

$$\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \mu^2} = \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{-c_k n_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d} \quad (\text{A.3.1})$$

$$\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \sigma^2 \partial \mu} = \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{-1}{(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^2} \left(\sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \sum_{j=1}^{n_k} y_{ij}^{(k)} - c_k n_k \mu_k \right) \quad (\text{A.3.2})$$

$$\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial d \partial \mu_k} = \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{-n_k}{(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^2} \left(\sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \sum_{j=1}^{n_k} y_{ij}^{(k)} - c_k n_k \mu_k \right) \quad (\text{A.3.3})$$

$$\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \mu \partial \sigma^2} = \sum_{k=1}^K \left(\frac{-1}{\sigma^4} + \frac{d(2\sigma^2 + n_k d)n_k}{\sigma^4(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^2} \right) \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \sum_{j=1}^{n_k} Z_{ij}^{(k)} \quad (\text{A.3.4})$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial^2 \ell}{(\partial \sigma^2)^2} = & \sum_{k=1}^K \left(\frac{c_k n_k}{2\sigma^4} \cdot \frac{\sigma^2 + (n_k - 1)d}{\sigma^2 + n_k d} - \frac{c_k n_k}{2\sigma^2} \cdot \frac{d}{(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^2} - \frac{c_k n_k S_k}{\sigma^6} \right. \\ & \left. - dc_k n_k T_k \frac{\sigma^2(\sigma^2 + n_k d) - (2\sigma^2 + n_k d)^2}{\sigma^6(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^3} \right) \quad (\text{A.3.5}) \end{aligned}$$

$$\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial d \partial \sigma^2} = \sum_{i=1}^K \left(\frac{c_k n_k}{2(\sigma^2 + n_k d)} - \frac{c_k n_k T_k}{\sigma^4} \cdot \frac{(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^2 - n_k d(2\sigma^2 + n_k d)}{(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^3} \right) \quad (\text{A.3.6})$$

$$\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \mu \partial d} = \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{-n_k}{(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^2} \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} \sum_{j=1}^{n_k} Z_{ij}^{(k)} \quad (\text{A.3.7})$$

$$\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \sigma^2 \partial d} = \sum_{k=1}^K \left(\frac{c_k n_k}{2(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^2} - \frac{c_k n_k T_k}{(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^3} \right) \quad (\text{A.3.8})$$

$$\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial d^2} = \sum_{k=1}^K \left(\frac{c_k n_k^2}{2(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^2} - \frac{c_k n_k^2 T_k}{(\sigma^2 + n_k d)^3} \right) \quad (\text{A.3.9})$$

Should we use conditional likelihood, then the log-likelihood's kernel equals:

$$\begin{aligned}
L \propto & \prod_{i=1}^k \frac{1}{(2\pi)^{n_1/2} |\Sigma_{n_1}|^{1/2}} \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{2} (\mathbf{y}_{i1} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{n_1})' \Sigma_{n_1}^{-1} (\mathbf{y}_{i1} - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{n_1}) \right\} \\
& \times \left[\frac{\Phi(\alpha + \mathbf{y}'_{i1} \boldsymbol{\beta})}{\Phi \left(\frac{\alpha + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \boldsymbol{\beta}}{\sqrt{1 + \boldsymbol{\beta}' \Sigma_{n_1} \boldsymbol{\beta} / n_1}} \right)} \right] \\
& \times \prod_{i=k+1}^N \frac{1}{(2\pi)^{n_2/2} |\Sigma_{n_2}|^{1/2}} \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{2} (\mathbf{y}_i - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{n_2})' \Sigma_{n_2}^{-1} (\mathbf{y}_i - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{n_2}) \right\} \\
& \times \left[\frac{1 - \Phi(\alpha + \mathbf{y}'_{i1} \boldsymbol{\beta})}{1 - \Phi \left(\frac{\alpha + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \boldsymbol{\beta}}{\sqrt{1 + \boldsymbol{\beta}' \Sigma_{n_1} \boldsymbol{\beta} / n_1}} \right)} \right] \quad (\text{A.3.10})
\end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
\ell \propto & -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^k \left\{ \ln |\Sigma_{n_1}| + (\mathbf{y}_i - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{n_1})' \Sigma_{n_1}^{-1} (\mathbf{y}_i - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{n_1}) \right\} \\
& - k \ln \Phi(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\boldsymbol{\beta}}) \\
& - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=k+1}^N \left\{ \ln |\Sigma_{n_2}| + (\mathbf{y}_i - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{n_2})' \Sigma_{n_2}^{-1} (\mathbf{y}_i - \boldsymbol{\mu}_{n_2}) \right\} \\
& - (N - k) \ln \left\{ 1 - \Phi(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\boldsymbol{\beta}}) \right\}, \quad (\text{A.3.11})
\end{aligned}$$

with $\tilde{\alpha} = \frac{\alpha}{\sqrt{1+\beta' \Sigma_{n_1} \beta / n_1}}$ and $\tilde{\beta} = \frac{\beta}{\sqrt{1+\beta' \Sigma_{n_1} \beta / n_1}}$. The corresponding score equations are:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \mu} = & \frac{1}{\sigma^2 + n_1 d} \left(\sum_{i=1}^k \sum_{j=1}^{n_1} \mathbf{y}_{ij} - k n_1 \mu \right) - k n_1 \mathbf{j}'_{\mathbf{n}_1} \tilde{\beta} \frac{\phi(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta})}{\Phi(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta})} \\ & + \frac{1}{\sigma^2 + n_2 d} \left(\sum_{i=k+1}^N \sum_{j=1}^{n_2} \mathbf{y}_{ij} - (N-k) n_2 \mu \right) \\ & - (N-k) n_2 \mathbf{j}'_{\mathbf{n}_1} \tilde{\beta} \frac{\phi(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta})}{\Phi(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta})}, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.3.12})$$

with $\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \sigma^2}$ and $\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial d}$ identical to (A.2.3) and (A.2.4). The components of the Hessian are:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \mu^2} = & \frac{-k n_1}{\sigma^2 + n_1 d} - \frac{(N-k) n_2}{\sigma^2 + n_2 d} \\ & - k n_1 \mathbf{j}'_{\mathbf{n}_1} \tilde{\beta} \left[\frac{-\Phi(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta}) \cdot \phi(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta}) \cdot (\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta}) \cdot \mathbf{j}'_{\mathbf{n}_1} \tilde{\beta}}{\Phi^2(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta})} \right. \\ & \quad \left. - \frac{\phi^2(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta}) \cdot \mathbf{j}'_{\mathbf{n}_1} \tilde{\beta}}{\Phi^2(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta})} \right] \\ & + (N-k) n_2 \mathbf{j}'_{\mathbf{n}_1} \tilde{\beta} \\ & \times \left[\frac{-(1 - \Phi(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta})) \cdot \phi(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta}) \cdot (\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta}) \cdot \mathbf{j}'_{\mathbf{n}_1} \tilde{\beta}}{(1 - \Phi(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta}))^2} \right. \\ & \quad \left. + \frac{\phi^2(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta}) \cdot \mathbf{j}'_{\mathbf{n}_1} \tilde{\beta}}{(1 - \Phi(\tilde{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\mu}'_{n_1} \tilde{\beta}))^2} \right] \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.3.13})$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \sigma^2 \partial \mu} = & \frac{-1}{(\sigma^2 + n_1 d)^2} \left(\sum_{i=1}^k \sum_{j=1}^{n_1} \mathbf{y}_{ij} - k n_1 \mu \right) \\ & - \frac{1}{(\sigma^2 + n_2 d)^2} \left(\sum_{i=k+1}^N \sum_{j=1}^{n_2} \mathbf{y}_{ij} - (N-k) n_2 \mu \right) \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.3.14})$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial d \partial \mu} = & \frac{-n_1}{(\sigma^2 + n_1 d)^2} \left(\sum_{i=1}^k \sum_{j=1}^{n_1} \mathbf{y}_{ij} - k n_1 \mu \right) \\ & - \frac{n_2}{(\sigma^2 + n_2 d)^2} \left(\sum_{i=k+1}^N \sum_{j=1}^{n_2} \mathbf{y}_{ij} - (N-k) n_2 \mu \right) \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.3.15})$$

with $\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \mu \partial \sigma^2}$, $\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \sigma^2 \partial d}$, $\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial d \partial \sigma^2}$, $\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \mu \partial d}$, $\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \sigma^2 \partial d}$, and $\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial (d)^2}$ indentical to (A.3.4), (A.3.5), (A.3.6), (A.3.7), (A.3.8), and (A.3.9).

A.4 Pseudo-likelihood for split samples

A.4.1 General considerations

Informally, a pseudo-likelihood function is one that replaces a computationally intractable or slow-to-maximize likelihood function, with another function that still produces a consistent and asymptotically normal estimator when maximised, i.e., by setting the first derivatives of the log pseudo-likelihood equal to zero and solving the resultant pseudo score equations. An early reference is Arnold and Strauss (1991), and details on various forms of pseudo-likelihood can be found in (Molenberghs and Verbeke, 2005, Ch. 9, 12, 21, 22, 24, and 25). In the current

clustered setting, the likelihood contribution of a cluster is often replaced by a product of contributions for various sub-vectors. In some cases, such a sub-vector can be conditioned upon another sub-vector.

Fieuws and Verbeke (2006) and Fieuws et al. (2006) used pseudo-likelihood to fit mixed models to high-dimensional multivariate longitudinal data. They supplemented the standard method with an additional device. They first replaced a set of M longitudinal sequences by the $M(M - 1)/2$ longitudinal pairs. This in itself is a standard application of pseudo-likelihood. They then assumed that each pair has its own parameter vector. Symbolically, this can be written as:

$$p\ell(\boldsymbol{\theta}) \equiv p\ell(\mathbf{y}_{1i}, \mathbf{y}_{2i}, \dots, \mathbf{y}_{Mi} | \boldsymbol{\theta}) = \sum_{r < s} \ell(\mathbf{y}_{ri}, \mathbf{y}_{si} | \boldsymbol{\theta}_{rs}), \quad (\text{A.4.1})$$

where \mathbf{Y}_{ri} is the r th sequence for subject i . In (A.4.1), $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ results from stacking all $M(M - 1)/2$ pair-specific parameter vectors $\boldsymbol{\theta}_{rs}$. The actual parameter vector of interest is $\boldsymbol{\theta}^*$, the set of non-redundant parameters is $\boldsymbol{\theta}$.

To obtain $\boldsymbol{\theta}^*$, Fieuws and Verbeke (2006) take averages of all available estimates for that specific parameter, implying that $\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^* = A\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$ for an appropriate linear combination matrix A . Further, combining this step with general pseudo-likelihood inference, a sandwich estimator is used:

$$\sqrt{N}(\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^* - \boldsymbol{\theta}^*) = \sqrt{N}(A\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - A \boldsymbol{\theta}^*) \quad (\text{A.4.2})$$

$$bm\boldsymbol{\theta}) \stackrel{\text{approx.}}{\sim} N(\mathbf{0}, AI_0^{-1}I_1I_0^{-1}A'), \quad (\text{A.4.3})$$

where

$$I_0(\boldsymbol{\theta}) = E \left[\frac{\partial^2 p\ell(\boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}' \partial \boldsymbol{\theta}} \right], \quad I_1(\boldsymbol{\theta}) = E \left[\left(\frac{\partial p\ell(\boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' \cdot \frac{\partial p\ell(\boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}} \right]. \quad (\text{A.4.4})$$

Molenberghs et al. (2011) took a very similar route to partition a potentially large sample into sub-samples.

To fix ideas, consider log-likelihood (4.4). When used as an instrument to estimate a single vector (μ, σ^2, d) , this function can be viewed a pseudo-likelihood. This setting can be generalized by assuming that a dataset, consisting of repeated measures per subject, is divided into K subgroups, each containing c_k independent replicates. Consider the pseudo-likelihood:

$$p\ell(\boldsymbol{\theta}) = \sum_{k=1}^K \ell(\boldsymbol{\theta}_k | \mathbf{y}_1^{(k)}, \dots, \mathbf{y}_{c_k}^{(k)}). \quad (\text{A.4.5})$$

While the underlying principle is similar to (A.4.1), it is not identical. The similarities are: (1) all $\boldsymbol{\theta}_k$ are assumed to be different, allowing for separate, even parallel, estimation; (2) $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ stacks all vectors $\boldsymbol{\theta}_k$; (3) the parameter of interest $\boldsymbol{\theta}^*$, is found from an appropriate combination of the $\boldsymbol{\theta}_k$. Parallel estimation was also followed by Scott et al. (2016) and Neiswanger et al. (2013).

There are important differences, however. Here, and in the remainder of the article, we assume that $\ell(\boldsymbol{\theta}_k | \mathbf{y}_1^{(k)}, \dots, \mathbf{y}_{c_k}^{(k)})$ is the likelihood that we would have, should group k be the only one in the data. That is,

the individual likelihood contributions are not altered, rather the data are partitioned. This is similar to the independent partitioning done by Molenberghs et al. (2011). In line with their derivations, (A.4.3) can also be used here. Given that $\ell_k(\boldsymbol{\theta}_k)$ is a genuine likelihood, its contributions to $I_0(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ and $I_1(\boldsymbol{\theta})$ are identical, up to the sign. As a result, $I_0(\boldsymbol{\theta})^{-1}I_1(\boldsymbol{\theta})I_0(\boldsymbol{\theta})^{-1} = -I_0(\boldsymbol{\theta})^{-1}$, a block-diagonal matrix with blocks of the form $I_0(\boldsymbol{\theta}_k)$. We now turn to the split-sample case.

A.4.2 Pseudo-likelihood for split sample

Molenberghs et al. (2011) chose

$$A = \frac{1}{K}(I, \dots, I) \quad (\text{A.4.6})$$

to pass from $\boldsymbol{\theta}$ to $\boldsymbol{\theta}^*$. This is a sensible choice in the i.i.d. setting (e.g., when all clusters in a CS model have the same size) and with the same number of subjects per sub-sample. The estimator and precision estimator then become:

$$\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^* = \frac{1}{K} \sum_{k=1}^K \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k, \quad (\text{A.4.7})$$

$$\text{var}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^*) = \frac{1}{K} H_{\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}}^{-1}, \quad (\text{A.4.8})$$

with $H_{\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}}^{-1} = -I_0(\boldsymbol{\theta}_k)$. In this special case, the expected information matrices are identical. Alternatively, one can use the observed information

matrices, and then use instead:

$$\frac{1}{K^2} \sum_{k=1}^K \mathcal{H}_{\hat{\theta},k}^{-1}. \quad (\text{A.4.9})$$

where $\mathcal{H}_{\hat{\theta},k}$ is the observed information for sub-sample k .

In this particular case, pseudo-likelihood produces the same estimator as full likelihood. This stems from the fact that all subjects follow the same distribution, in contrast to, for example, the setting set out at the start of Section 4. Should the subjects have identical distributions, but with c_k variables, the above results can be modified accordingly. For example, (A.4.7) would be replaced by

$$\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}^* = \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{c_k}{N} \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k,$$

with similar modification to precision estimation. In this case, full likelihood would be obtained.

In the next section, we will consider the more general case where different subjects may have a different distribution such as, for example, the CS case with a different number of measurements per cluster.

A.5 Derivation of optimal scalar weights for compound-symmetry case

To find the optimal scalar weight with minimum variance for μ we use the method of Lagrange with the constraint that the weights a_k need to sum to 1:

$$Q = \sum_{k=1}^K a_k^2 \frac{\sigma^2 + n_k d}{c_k n_k} - \lambda \left(\sum_{k=1}^K a_k - 1 \right). \quad (\text{A.5.1})$$

Solving the first partial derivative we become an expression for a_k involving λ . Summing this one produces an expression for λ , leading to the complete formula for a_k . Precisely, the system of equations is:

$$\frac{\partial Q}{\partial a_k} = 2a_k \frac{\sigma^2 + n_k d}{c_k n_k} - \lambda = 0, \quad (\text{A.5.2})$$

$$\frac{\partial Q}{\partial \lambda} = \sum_{k=1}^K a_k - 1 = 0, \quad (\text{A.5.3})$$

or, alternatively:

$$a_k = \frac{\lambda}{2} \frac{c_k n_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d}, \quad (\text{A.5.4})$$

$$\lambda = \left(\frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=1}^K \frac{c_k n_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d} \right)^{-1}, \quad (\text{A.5.5})$$

and hence

$$a_k = \frac{\frac{c_k n_k}{\sigma^2 + n_k d}}{\sum_{m=1}^K \frac{c_m n_m}{\sigma^2 + n_m d}}.$$

In the same manner, expressions for b_k and g_k can be found, as we will show next. For σ^2 :

$$Q = 2\sigma^4 \sum_{k=1}^K b_k^2 \frac{1}{c_k(n_k - 1)} - \lambda \left(\sum_{k=1}^K b_k - 1 \right),$$

producing the system:

$$\frac{\partial Q}{\partial b_k} = \frac{4\sigma^4 b_k}{c_k(n_k - 1)} - \lambda = 0, \quad (\text{A.5.6})$$

$$\frac{\partial Q}{\partial \lambda} = \sum_{k=1}^K b_k - 1 = 0, \quad (\text{A.5.7})$$

which can be rewritten as:

$$4\sigma^4 b_k = \lambda c_k(n_k - 1), \quad (\text{A.5.8})$$

$$\lambda = \frac{4\sigma^4}{\sum_{k=1}^K c_k(n_k - 1)}, \quad (\text{A.5.9})$$

and finally:

$$b_k = \frac{c_k(n_k - 1)}{\sum_{m=1}^K c_m(n_m - 1)}.$$

For d , the objective function is:

$$Q = \sum_{k=1}^K g_k^2 v_k - \lambda \left(\sum_{k=1}^K g_k - 1 \right),$$

with

$$v_k = \frac{2}{c_k n_k} \left(\frac{\sigma^4}{n_k - 1} + 2d\sigma^2 + n_k d^2 \right).$$

The system of equations now is:

$$\frac{\partial Q}{\partial g_k} = 2g_k v_k - \lambda = 0, \quad (\text{A.5.10})$$

$$\frac{\partial Q}{\partial \lambda} = \sum_{k=1}^K g_k - 1 = 0, \quad (\text{A.5.11})$$

leading to:

$$g_k = \lambda \frac{1}{2v_k}, \quad (\text{A.5.12})$$

$$\lambda = \frac{2}{\sum_{k=1}^K \frac{1}{v_k}}, \quad (\text{A.5.13})$$

giving the solution:

$$g_k = \frac{\frac{c_k n_k}{\sigma^4 + 2d\sigma^2 + n_k d^2}}{\sum_{m=1}^K \frac{c_m n_k}{n_m - 1} + 2d\sigma^2 + n_m d^2}.$$

A.5.1 Cluster-by-cluster analysis

We study the case of the most extreme partitioning, i.e., where each of the clusters is analyzed separately. This can be relevant in cases with perhaps a limited number of very to extremely large clusters. This means that $c_k \equiv 1$ throughout. Clearly, the n_k will then no longer be unique. We will examine this case in detail, and contrast a first weighted estimator with an *ad hoc* one.

The Weighted Estimator for the Cluster-by-cluster Case

The estimator follows from setting $c_k \equiv 1$ and hence $K \equiv N$ throughout. For example, this special case can easily be considered for all expressions in Sections 6.1.1-6.1.3. Because c_k enters the inverse of the variance-covariance matrix multiplicatively, as is seen from (4.8)-(4.9), the optimal estimator that is obtained when each cluster is considered to be its own stratum, is identical to the one obtained when strata are defined in terms of all clusters of a given size. The same is true for the scalar weights.

It is insightful to consider in more detail the special case where further the cluster sizes are all identical to n . One then easily obtains:

$$\hat{\mu} = \frac{1}{Nn} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^n Y_{ij}, \quad (\text{A.5.14})$$

$$\hat{\sigma}^2 = \frac{1}{Nn(n-1)} \left(n \sum_{i=1}^N \mathbf{Z}'_i \mathbf{Z}_i - \sum_{i=1}^N \mathbf{Z}'_i J_n \mathbf{Z}_i \right) \quad (\text{A.5.15})$$

$$= \frac{1}{Nn(n-1)} (nQ - R), \quad (\text{A.5.16})$$

$$\hat{d} = \frac{1}{Nn(n-1)} \left(\sum_{i=1}^N \mathbf{Z}'_i J_n \mathbf{Z}_i - \sum_{i=1}^N \mathbf{Z}'_i \mathbf{Z}_i \right) \quad (\text{A.5.17})$$

$$= \frac{1}{Nn(n-1)} (Q - R), \quad (\text{A.5.18})$$

with obvious notation for Q and R , inspired by (A.2.5)–(A.2.6). The corresponding variance-covariance elements, similar in spirit to (4.8)–

(4.9), are:

$$\text{var}(\hat{\mu}) = \frac{\sigma^2 + nd}{Nn}, \quad (\text{A.5.19})$$

$$\text{var} \begin{pmatrix} \widehat{\sigma^2} \\ \widehat{d} \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} \frac{2\sigma^4}{N(n-1)} & -\frac{2\sigma^4}{Nn(n-1)} \\ -\frac{2\sigma^4}{Nn(n-1)} & \frac{2}{Nn} \left[\frac{\sigma^4}{n-1} + 2\sigma^2 d + nd^2 \right] \end{pmatrix}. \quad (\text{A.5.20})$$

This estimator coincides with the MLE, as is known from Molenberghs et al. (2011).

A Two-stage Estimator for Compound Symmetry

In linear mixed models, there is a method of estimation, sometimes called the two-stage approach (Laird et al., 1982; Verbeke and Molenberghs, 2000), in which each cluster is analyzed separately to begin with, using linear regression, after which the cluster-specific parameters are summarized into fixed effects. Although the above cluster-by-cluster analysis is superficially similar to this, it is not equivalent. In particular, there is no bias (as can be seen in the two stage method), and the maximum likelihood estimator is recovered.

This approach is most useful when cluster sizes are not constant, and in models that are more complex than compound symmetry. However, to gain some insight, we develop the details of the method for the CS model with constant cluster size.

For the mean, (A.5.14) is retained, as the average of the cluster-specific

averages \bar{Y}_i . Further, define:

$$s^2 = \frac{1}{Nn} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^n (Y_{ij} - \bar{Y}_i)^2, \quad (\text{A.5.21})$$

$$t^2 = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N (\bar{Y}_i - \hat{\mu})^2. \quad (\text{A.5.22})$$

Straightforward algebra shows:

$$E(s^2) = \frac{n-1}{n} \sigma^2, \quad (\text{A.5.23})$$

$$E(t^2) = \frac{N-1}{N} \left(d + \frac{1}{n} \sigma^2 \right). \quad (\text{A.5.24})$$

Should n and N approach infinity, then it follows that s^2 and t^2 are asymptotically unbiased estimators for σ^2 and d , respectively. However, this is not always reasonable. In applications such as the NTP data (Section 2), it is fair to say that the cluster size has a biological upper limit. In other situations, however, such as meta-analyses, it is sensible to assume that both n and N approach infinity.

In the next section, we will study the consequences of removing the bias. For now, a small, obvious modification is:

$$s_*^2 = \frac{n}{n-1} s^2, \quad (\text{A.5.25})$$

$$t_*^2 = \frac{N}{N-1} t^2. \quad (\text{A.5.26})$$

Now, s_*^2 is unbiased, while $E(t_*^2) = d + \sigma^2/n$, the bias σ^2/n can be made to disappear asymptotically provided it is sensible to let n grow large.

It is of interest to consider the variance-covariance structure of the estimators s^2 , t^2 , s_*^2 , and t_*^2 , as well as to make relative efficiency considerations. This will be done next.

Connections Between Estimators

Comparing algebraic expressions (A.5.16)–(A.5.18) with (A.5.21)–(A.5.22), leads to the linear relationships:

$$s^2 = \frac{n-1}{n} \widehat{\sigma^2} + 0 \cdot \widehat{d}, \quad (\text{A.5.27})$$

$$t^2 = \frac{N-1}{Nn} \widehat{\sigma^2} + \frac{N-1}{N} \widehat{d}. \quad (\text{A.5.28})$$

Relationships (A.5.27)–(A.5.28) can be combined with (A.5.20) to produce:

$$\text{var} \begin{pmatrix} s^2 \\ t^2 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} \frac{2(n-1)\sigma^4}{Nn^2} & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{2(N-1)^2}{N^2n} \left[\frac{\sigma^4}{n} + 2\sigma^2d + nd^2 \right] \end{pmatrix} \quad (\text{A.5.29})$$

and, similarly,

$$\text{var} \begin{pmatrix} s_*^2 \\ t_*^2 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} \frac{2\sigma^4}{N(n-1)} & 0 \\ 0 & \frac{2}{Nn} \left[\frac{\sigma^4}{n} + 2\sigma^2d + nd^2 \right] \end{pmatrix}. \quad (\text{A.5.30})$$

From its definition it follows that $s_*^2 \equiv \widehat{\sigma^2}$. The same is not true for t_*^2 . One reason to consider it nevertheless is its independence from s_*^2 . Indeed, $(\widehat{\mu}, s_*^2 \equiv \widehat{\sigma^2}, t_*^2)'$ is an estimator with mutually independent components. While the same is true when s^2 and t^2 are used instead,

the biases are larger.

For this case then, the choice between \hat{d} and t_*^2 is in terms of a trade-off between efficiency and independence.

To gauge the efficiency loss when using t_*^2 , the mean squared error is:

$$MSE(t_*^2) = \frac{2}{Nn} \left(\frac{\sigma^4}{n} + 2\sigma^2 d + nd^2 \right) + \frac{1}{n^2} \sigma^4,$$

and hence the relative MSE:

$$RMSE(t^2; \hat{d}) = \frac{2 \left(\frac{\sigma^4}{n} + 2\sigma^2 d + nd^2 \right) + \frac{N}{n} \sigma^4}{2 \left(\frac{\sigma^4}{n-1} + 2\sigma^2 d + nd^2 \right)}, \quad (\text{A.5.31})$$

which approaches infinity when N does, while n would remain constant. In other words, this estimator is inconsistent unless it is being applied in situations where n can also be considered to be large.

There are three distinct situations. First, when $N/n = \lambda n + o(n)$, for some λ , i.e., when N is of the order of n^2 , then, based on (A.5.31), the ARE is $2(d^2 + \lambda\sigma^4)/[2d^2]$. The magnitude of the efficiency loss depends on sizes of the parameters involved. Second, when $\mathcal{O}(N) < \mathcal{O}(n^2)$, the ARE equals 1. This includes the cases where N is constant, $N = n^{1/2}$, $N = n$, and $N = n^{3/2}$, for example. A constant or slowly increasing N is plausible in a meta-analytic context. Third, if N/n increases too quickly, i.e., $\mathcal{O}(N/n) > \mathcal{O}(n)$, then the estimator t_*^2 is inconsistent. This is the case, in particular, for bounded n .

The estimators s^2 and t^2 can be combined linearly to produce unbiased estimators. In other words, based on (A.5.23)–(A.5.24), the following corrections can be applied to (A.5.21)–(A.5.22):

$$s_{\text{corr}}^2 = \frac{n}{n-1} s^2, \quad (\text{A.5.32})$$

$$t_{\text{corr}}^2 = \frac{N}{N-1} t^2 - \frac{N}{(n-1)(N-1)} s^2. \quad (\text{A.5.33})$$

Interestingly, this requirement reproduces (A.5.27)–(A.5.28): the requirement of an unbiased estimator reproduces $\widehat{\sigma^2}$ and \widehat{d} , presented in (A.5.16)–(A.5.18) and hence also with their variance.

A.6 Details about the first simulation study

The simulation study, summarized in Section 7, is described in detail here.

A.6.1 Simulation method

The design of the simulation study is as follows.

- Each generated set of data consists of c_k clusters of size n_k , for $k = 1, \dots, K$. We choose $K = 4$ throughout.
- For a generated set of data, the splitting is done by placing all clusters of a given size in one sub-sample.
- The CS model parameters are $\mu = 0$, $d = 1$, and $\sigma^2 = 2$.

- After estimating the three model parameters within each sub-sample, they are combined using the following weighting methods:
(a) equal, (b) proportional, where the weights are

$$w_k = \frac{c_k}{\sum_{\ell=1}^4 c_\ell},$$

and (c) size-proportional, where the weights for μ and d are:

$$w_k \frac{c_k n_k}{\sum_{\ell=k}^4 c_\ell n_\ell},$$

while for σ^2 we take:

$$w_k = \frac{c_k(n_k - 1)}{\sum_{\ell=1}^4 c_\ell(n_\ell - 1)}.$$

- Per setting, 100 replications are considered.

These settings are applied to various combinations of the n_k and c_k , now described in turn.

A.6.2 Setting 1: equal $c_k \cdot n_k$, different c_k and n_k .

Consider 150 samples in each split, as follows: $(c_1, n_1) = (3, 50)$, $(c_2, n_2) = (5, 30)$, $(c_3, n_3) = (10, 15)$, and $(c_4, n_4) = (15, 10)$. The results are presented in Table A.6.4. Graphical depictions can be found in Figures A.6.1 and A.6.2. Figure A.6.1 shows that there is a different amount of information in the various sub-samples. This is not a problem, rather a consequence of the way the splits are created and the different

amounts of information carried in each. It reminds us that we need to be judicious how the information from the splits will be weighted. It is not a surprise that equal weights are a poor choice. The other methods perform similarly, and all do very well. To varying degrees, the same will be seen in Settings 2 and 3.

Table A.6.4: First simulation study. Setting 1. Average of split-specific and combined (weighted) parameters and their precision estimates.

	μ	$\text{var}(\mu)$	d	$\text{var}(d)$	σ^2	$\text{var}(\sigma^2)$
split1	-0.00396	0.05779	0.68143	0.41395	1.98676	0.00296
split2	0.05697	0.03071	0.80997	0.19712	1.98578	0.00304
split3	-0.02111	0.01174	0.95161	0.07869	1.97690	0.00319
split4	0.01123	0.00626	0.98870	0.04677	1.98056	0.00347
Equal	0.01078	0.03769	0.85793	0.09988	1.98250	0.01406
Prop	0.00698	0.03230	0.92245	0.08568	1.98081	0.01907
Size prop	0.01078	0.03769	0.85793	0.09988	1.98260	0.01405
Full	0.00780	0.03513	0.98016	0.08614	1.98257	0.01392

A.6.3 Setting 2: different $c_k \cdot n_k$, equal c_k , different n_k

To see the effect of split size, the following choices are made: $(c_1, n_1) = (4, 25)$, $(c_2, n_2) = (4, 50)$, $(c_3, n_3) = (4, 125)$, and $(c_4, n_4) = (4, 250)$. As a consequence, the size of the splits will be 100, 200, 500, and 1000, respectively. Table A.6.5 summarized the results, with graphical displays presented in Figures A.6.3 and A.6.4.

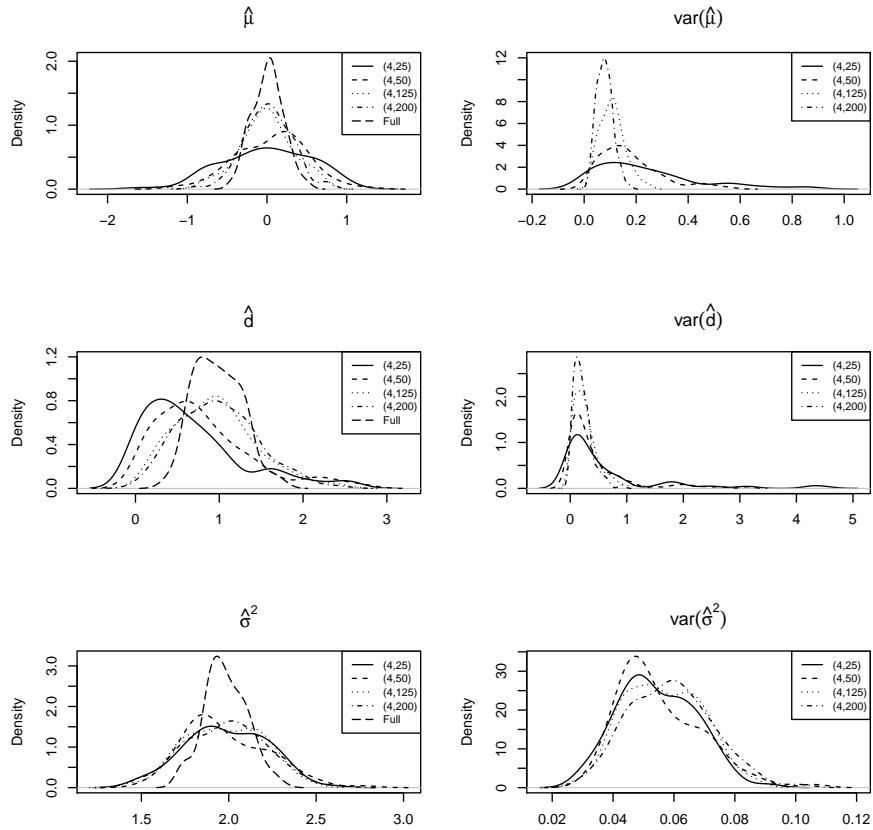


Figure A.6.1: First simulation study. Setting 1. Split-specific results.

A.6.4 Setting 3: different $c_k \cdot n_k$, different c_k , equal n_k

We now choose: $(c_1, n_1) = (10, 20)$, $(c_2, n_2) = (20, 20)$, $(c_3, n_3) = (50, 20)$, and $(c_4, n_4) = (100, 20)$. Table A.6.6 summarizes the results. Graphs can be found in Figures A.6.5 and A.6.6.

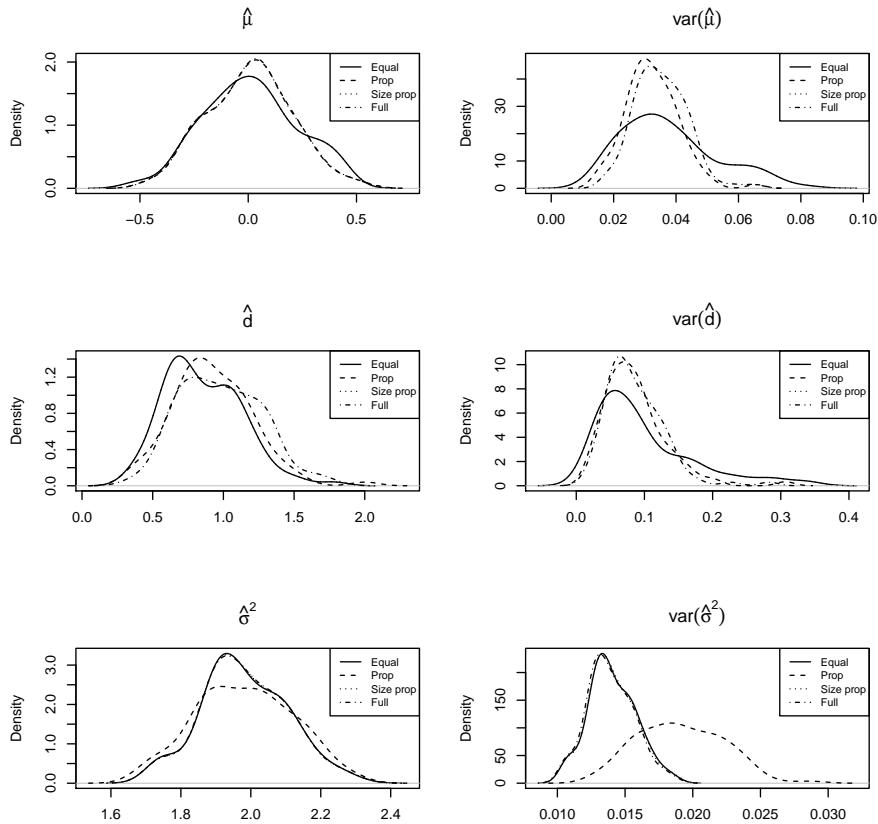


Figure A.6.2: First simulation study. Setting 1. Combining the results from the four splits, using equal, proportional, and size proportional weights. This is compared with full maximum likelihood.

A.6.5 Optimal, approximate optimal, and iterated optimal weights

Optimal weights were discussed in Section 6.1.1. When we plug the MLE's into the optimal weights, the result of using these weights is the

Table A.6.5: First simulation study. Setting 2. Average of split-specific and combined (weighted) parameters and their precision estimates.

	μ	$\text{var}(\mu)$	d	$\text{var}(d)$	σ^2	$\text{var}(\sigma^2)$
split1	-0.02515	0.05227	0.83440	0.52423	2.00347	0.00730
split2	0.01287	0.05157	0.86891	0.57904	1.97285	0.00160
split3	0.06812	0.03586	0.74147	0.23681	2.00165	0.00026
split4	-0.03676	0.02979	0.68241	0.14117	1.99216	0.00006
Equal	0.00477	0.05111	0.78180	0.14770	1.99253	0.00935
Prop	0.00477	0.05111	0.78180	0.14770	1.99253	0.00935
Size prop	-0.00147	0.07139	0.72798	0.16585	1.99328	0.00447
Full	0.00530	0.06339	0.89599	0.14604	1.99333	0.00446

MLE's itself. Of course, this is a circular reasoning, which is why one needs to resort to, for example, the approximate or iterated optimal weights derived in Section 6.1.2. For both of these, using Settings 1–3, we conducted simulations. They are reported in Figures A.6.7–A.6.9.

It is noteworthy that the behavior of the iterated optimal weights depends on c_k and n_k . First, they often but not always converge in a single iteration; the maximum number of iterations observed in our simulations being 6. Second, the iterated optimal weights converge to size optimal weights for σ^2 and to proportional weights for d .

Taken together, it follows that both approximately optimal and iterated optimal weights provide excellent results. The specific attraction of the approximate optimal weights is that they obviate the need for iteration, which is a factor of stability and speed.

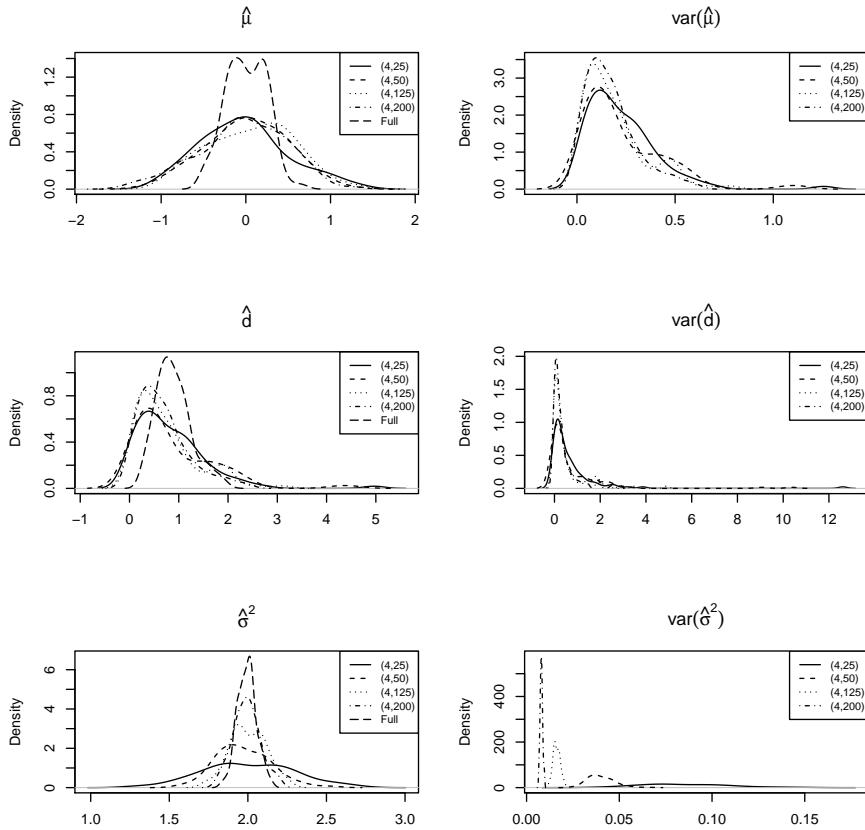


Figure A.6.3: First simulation study. Setting 2. Split-specific results.

A.7 Details about the second simulation study

The aim of this study is to compare the proposed method to two alternatives:

1. full maximum likelihood;

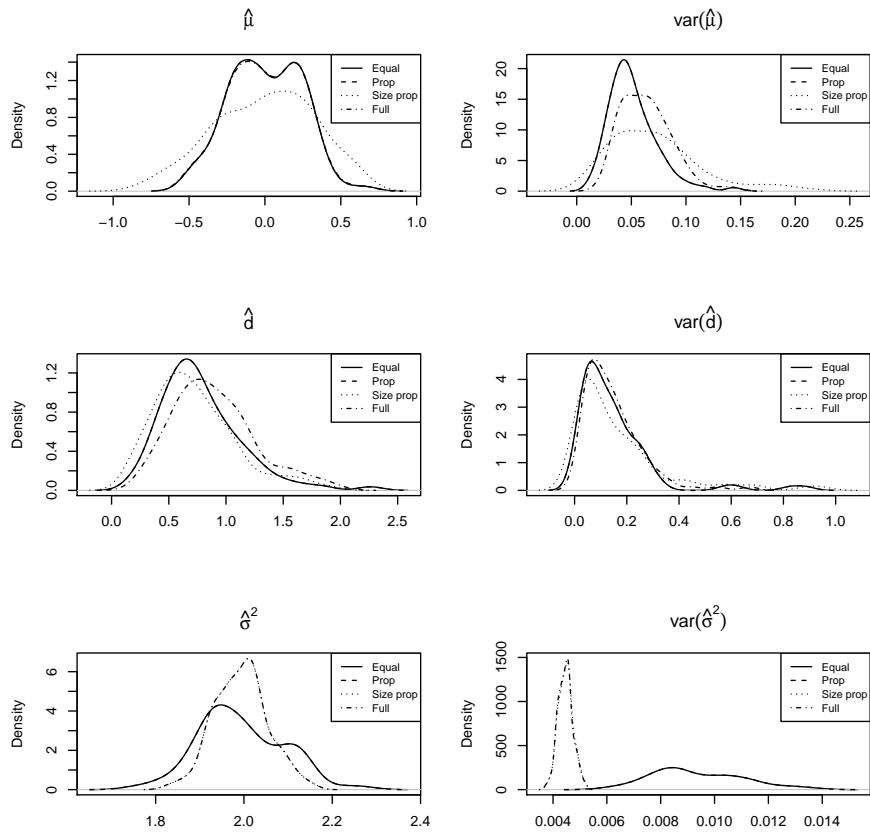


Figure A.6.4: First simulation study. Setting 2. Combining the results from the four splits, using equal, proportional, and size proportional weights. This is compared with full maximum likelihood.

2. the proposed sample-splitting method, allowing for closed forms;
3. using multiple imputation (MI) first, to render the clusters of equal sizes, and then apply closed-form solutions to the augmented

Table A.6.6: First simulation study. Setting 3. Average of split-specific and combined (weighted) parameters and their precision estimates.

	μ	$\text{var}(\mu)$	d	$\text{var}(d)$	σ^2	$\text{var}(\sigma^2)$
split1	0.00343	0.00900	0.84739	0.05169	2.02445	0.00190
split2	0.02553	0.00304	1.00224	0.01754	2.01962	0.00047
split3	-0.00010	0.00045	0.95794	0.00212	1.99765	0.00007
split4	0.01151	0.00012	1.01226	0.00064	1.98944	0.00002
Equal	0.01009	0.01139	0.95496	0.02694	2.00779	0.00486
Prop	0.00939	0.00604	0.98690	0.01369	1.99702	0.00234
Size prop	0.00939	0.00604	0.98690	0.01369	1.99702	0.00234
Full	0.00939	0.00614	1.00487	0.01372	1.99702	0.00233

balanced data, together with the combination rules.

A.7.1 Simulation plan

In order to study the effect of cluster sizes (n_k) and number of clusters of each size (c_k), 5 different configurations are considered:

Config. 1. $c_k = (15, 25, 30, 20, 10)$, $n_k = (8, 5, 3, 9, 15)$;

Config. 2. $c_k = (150, 250, 300, 200, 100)$, $n_k = (8, 5, 3, 9, 15)$;

Config. 3. $c_k = (1500, 2500, 3000, 2000, 1000)$, $n_k = (8, 5, 3, 9, 15)$;

Config. 4. $c_k = (15, 25, 30, 20, 10)$, $n_k = (80, 50, 30, 90, 150)$;

Config. 5. $c_k = (15, 25, 30, 20, 10)$, $n_k = (800, 500, 300, 900, 1500)$.

Each configuration is repeated 100 times.

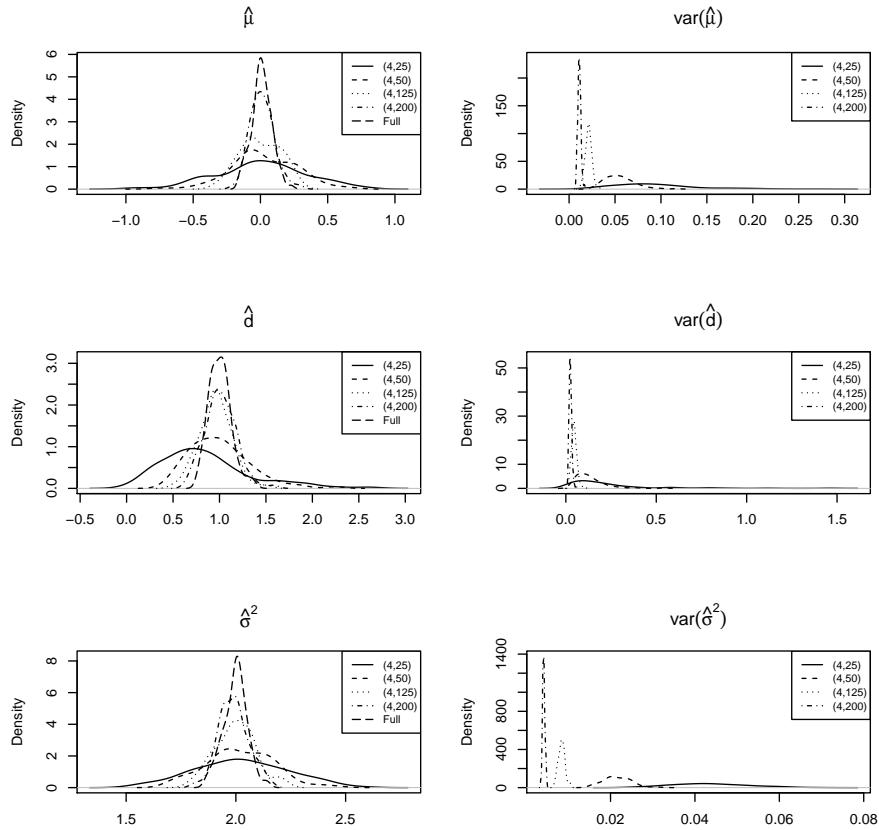


Figure A.6.5: First simulation study. Setting 3. Split-specific results.

Each cluster is generated from a CS model with $\mu_0 = 0$, $d_0 = 1$, and $\sigma_0^2 = 4$.

For estimating the parameters using the full unbalanced data, PROC MIXED in SAS (Version 9.4) is used with the covariance structure in the REPEATED statement set to type=cs.

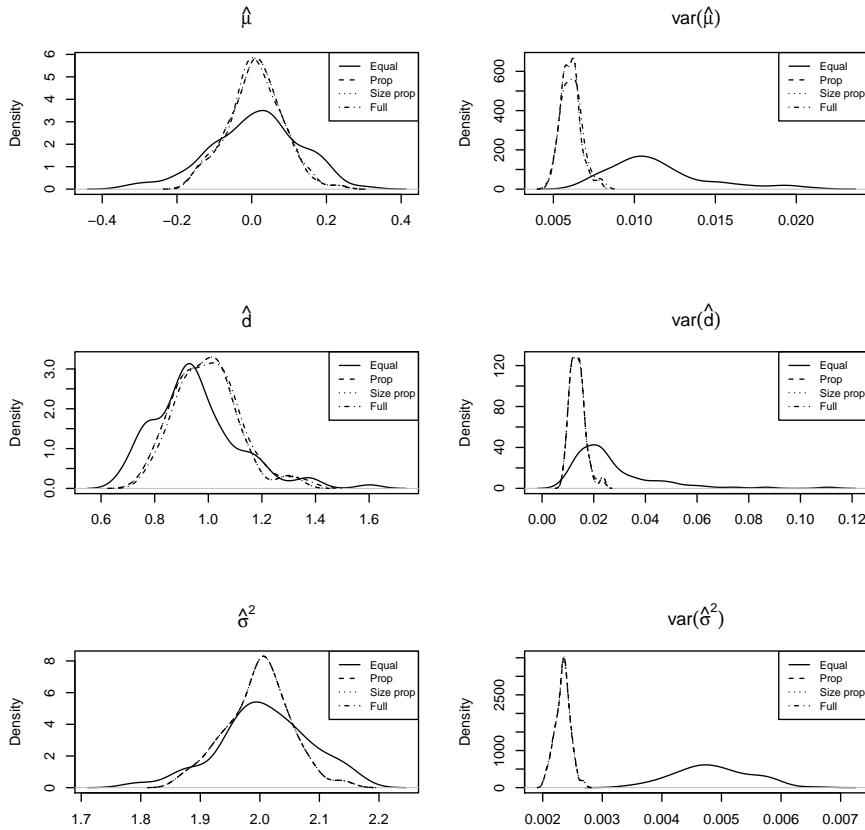


Figure A.6.6: First simulation study. Setting 3. Combining the results from the four splits, using equal, proportional, and size proportional weights. This is compared with full maximum likelihood.

The closed form solutions and their variances are implemented in R in three different ways. First, the formulas are implemented directly using ‘for’ loops. Following the ideas in Sikorska et al. (2013a), it might be faster to replace ‘for’ loops with vectorized computation. For $\hat{\mu}_k$

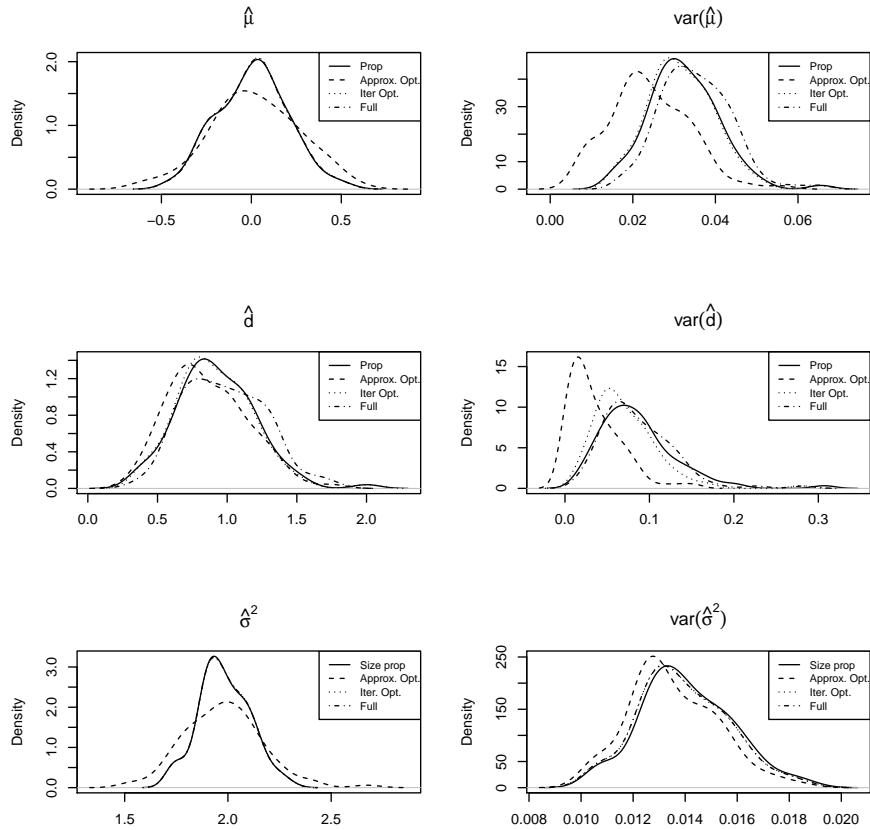


Figure A.6.7: First simulation study. Setting 1. (Size) proportional, approximate, and iterated optimal weights, as well as full maximum likelihood.

it is straightforward, since one just needs to compute an arithmetic average. If Z is a n_k times c_k matrix with its i th column defined as $Z_i^{(k)} = (Y_i^{(k)} - \mu_k \mathbf{1}_{n_k})$, then computing $\sum_{i=1}^{c_k} Z_i^{(k)'} Z_i^{(k)}$ is equivalent to replacing each element in matrix Z by its square, and then sum over the

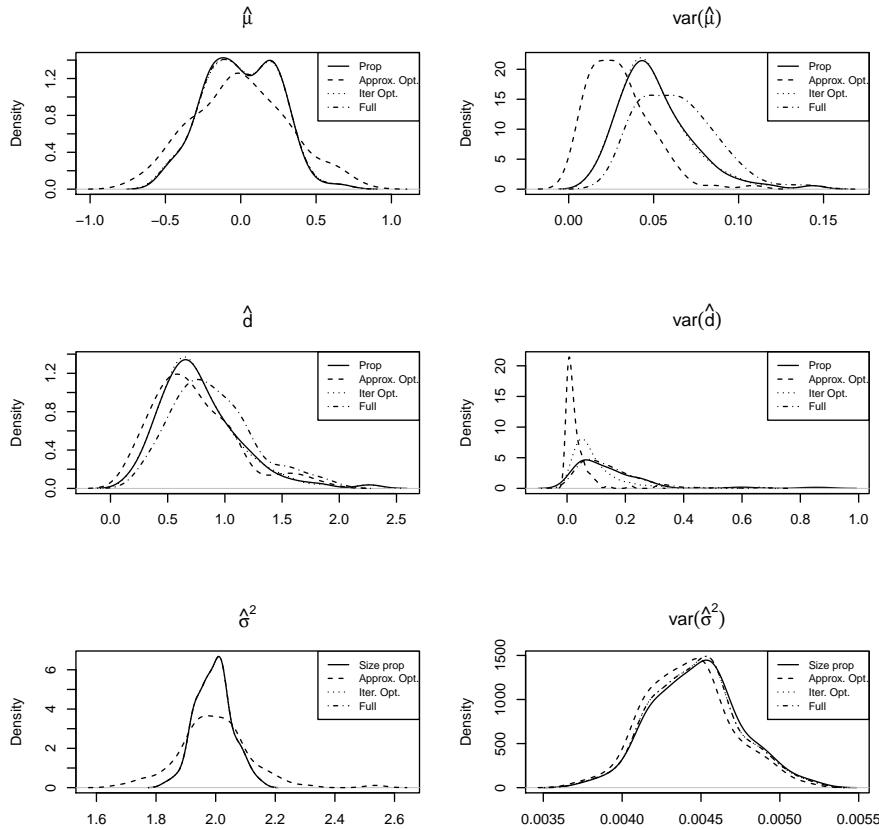


Figure A.6.8: First simulation study. Setting 2. (Size) proportional, approximate, and iterated optimal weights, as well as full maximum likelihood.

sum of its columns. Furthermore, $J_{n_k} Z_i^{(k)}$ would simply compute the sum of columns in matrix Z . Therefore, $\sum_{i=1}^{c_k} Z_i^{(k)'} J_{n_k} Z_I^{(k)}$ is equivalent to post-multiplying Z by the sum of its columns and then sum over this vector. In this way, within each split, the parameters can be estimated

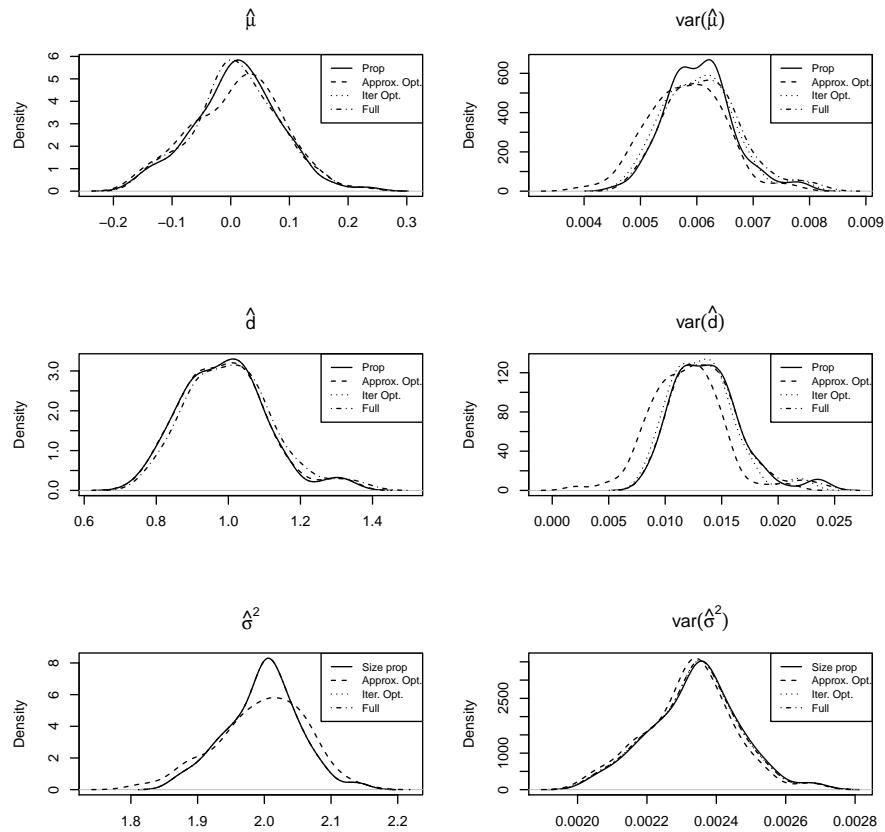


Figure A.6.9: First simulation study. Setting 3. (Size) proportional, approximate, and iterated optimal weights, as well as full maximum likelihood.

avoiding ‘for’ loops.

Second, it is also possible to find the estimates for all of the splits at once instead of computing them separately.

A third way consists of calculating all the estimates together and not split by split in a ‘for’ loop. This approach is possible via imposing balance through adding missing values in the matrix but, when multiplying and summing, ignoring the missing values. This is very easy in R.

We will compare computation time between these three approaches, for the five configurations.

Additionally, to combine the results from sample splitting, the same weights as used in the case study are considered here as well: equal, proportional, approximate scalar, scalar, and approximate optimal. In the case of the approximate optimal weights both simple and proper variances are calculated.

For the multiple imputation based approach, $M = 20$ imputations are considered and the conventional combination rules applied.

Note that the MI approach cannot be used with configurations 1, 4, and 5, because the number of available subjects in the observed dataset is less than the number of repeated measurements, leading to a singular covariance matrix. From the remaining configurations 2 and 3, we have chosen #2, which implies smaller numbers and hence is more challenging.

For each configuration we report three results: the estimated parameters, their standard errors, and the mean square error (MSE). Furthermore, we report computation time.

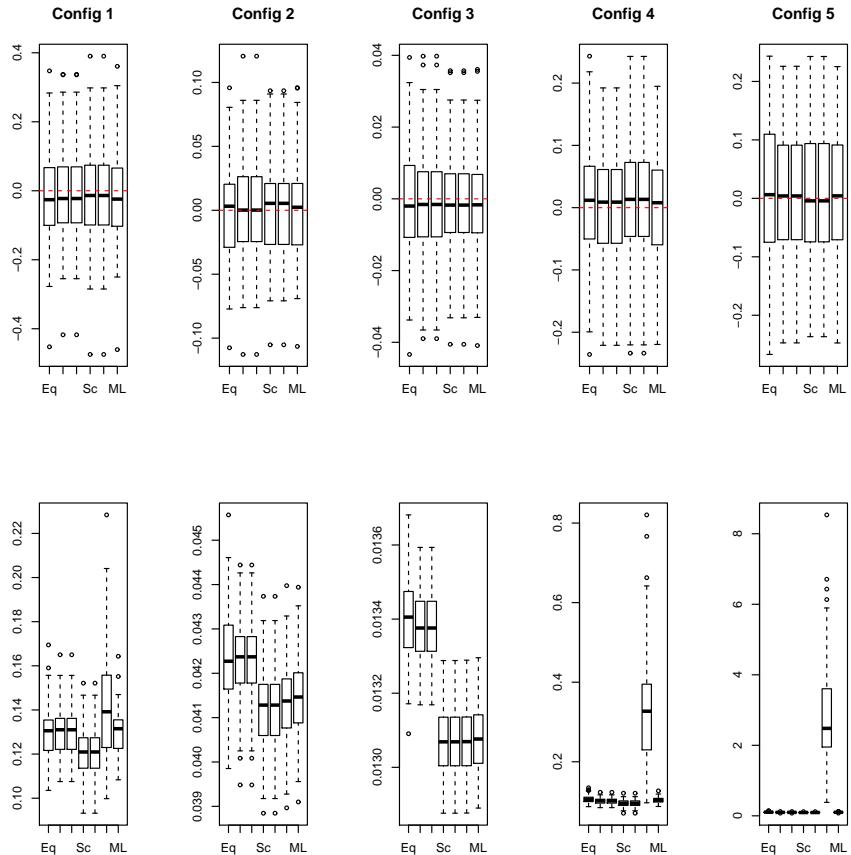


Figure A.7.10: Second simulation study. Estimates for μ (first row) and its standard error (second row).

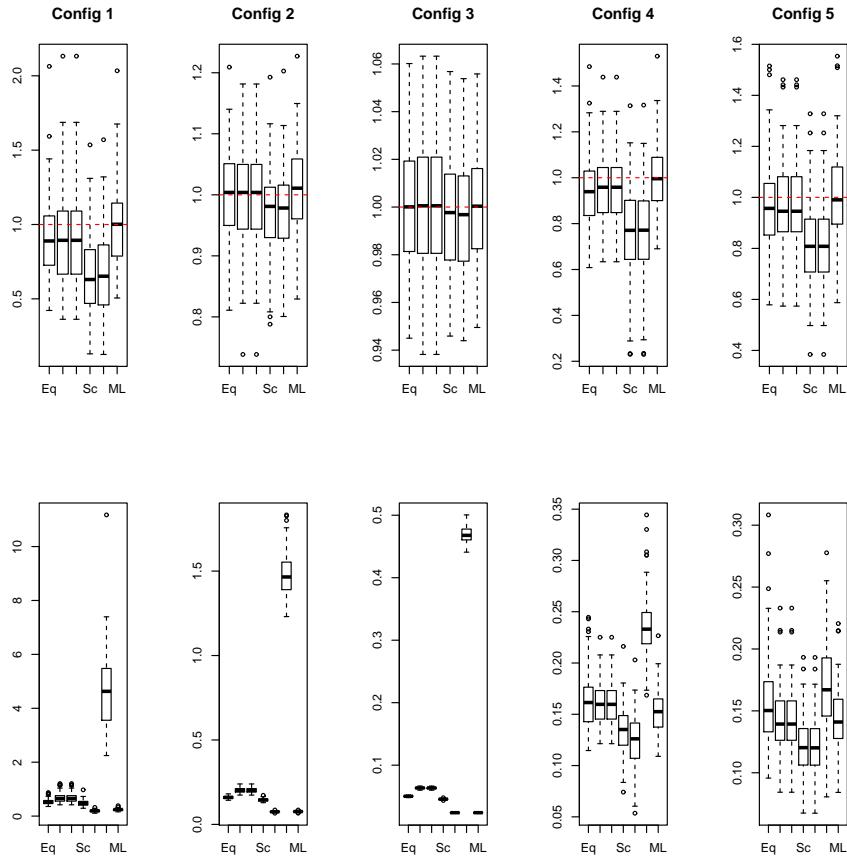


Figure A.7.11: Second simulation study. Estimates for d (first row) and standard errors (second row).

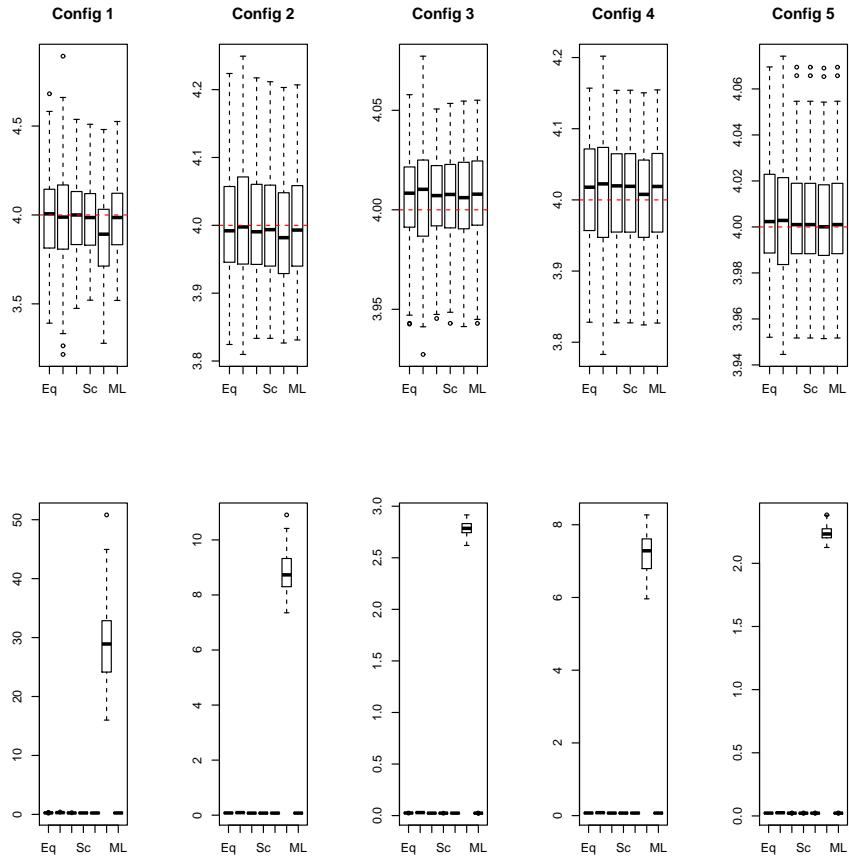


Figure A.7.12: Second simulation study. Estimates for σ^2 (first row) and standard errors (second row).

Table A.7.7: Second simulation study. Mean, standard deviation (S.D.) and MSE for μ among 100 replications for each configuration using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE.

Config.		Equal	Prop	Approx. sc.	Scalar	Approx. opt.	ML
1	Mean	-1.72277E-02	-1.51605E-02	-1.51605E-02	-1.21296E-02	-1.21296E-02	-1.56028E-02
	S.D.	(1.32751E-01)	(1.28989E-01)	(1.28989E-01)	(1.32435E-01)	(1.32435E-01)	(1.29150E-01)
	MSE	1.77434E-02	1.67015E-02	1.67015E-02	1.75108E-02	1.75108E-02	1.67564E-02
2	Mean	-9.39926E-04	6.93419E-04	6.93419E-04	1.27613E-03	1.27613E-03	7.59533E-04
	S.D.	(3.93526E-02)	(3.95534E-02)	(3.95534E-02)	(3.84321E-02)	(3.84321E-02)	(3.83996E-02)
	MSE	1.53403E-03	1.54930E-03	1.54930E-03	1.46389E-03	1.46389E-03	1.46036E-03
3	Mean	-8.30934E-04	-1.25609E-03	-1.25609E-03	-1.26810E-03	-1.26810E-03	-1.31356E-03
	S.D.	(1.44839E-02)	(1.47545E-02)	(1.47545E-02)	(1.41310E-02)	(1.41310E-02)	(1.41704E-02)
	MSE	2.08376E-04	2.17095E-04	2.17095E-04	1.99298E-04	1.99298E-04	2.00517E-04
4	Mean	9.30928E-03	2.53713E-03	2.53713E-03	8.29367E-03	8.29367E-03	2.82086E-03
	S.D.	(9.26881E-02)	(8.32009E-02)	(8.32009E-02)	(9.76672E-02)	(9.76672E-02)	(8.28999E-02)
	MSE	8.59183E-03	6.85960E-03	6.85960E-03	9.51227E-03	9.51227E-03	6.81163E-03
5	Mean	9.77532E-03	1.02173E-02	1.02173E-02	8.72381E-03	8.72381E-03	1.02422E-02
	S.D.	(1.09769E-01)	(1.04876E-01)	(1.04876E-01)	(1.04982E-01)	(1.04982E-01)	(1.04847E-01)
	MSE	1.20243E-02	1.09934E-02	1.09934E-02	1.09872E-02	1.09872E-02	1.09880E-02

A.7.2 Simulation results

Based on the simulation results, it appears that using equal weights is not recommended, while using proportional weights produces results comparable with ML. Of course, in case of σ^2 the approximate scalar weights work better comparing with ML. An interesting outcome of the simulation is that by keeping the number of clusters of different sizes constant, but allowing the cluster sizes to increase, improves estimation of σ^2 , while increasing the number of clusters and keeping their sizes constant improves the estimation of d . This is not surprising, because d is the between-cluster variability, which is easier to estimate from a larger number of clusters. This should be seen against the background of relatively small differences anyway.

The results based on MI are not comparable with sample-splitting results.

Table A.7.8: Second simulation study. Mean and standard deviation (S.D.) for standard errors of μ estimates in 100 replications for each configuration using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE.

Config.		Equal	Prop	Approx. sc.	Scalar	Simple opt.	Proper opt.	ML
1	Mean	1.29844E-01	1.29733E-01	1.29733E-01	1.20593E-01	1.20593E-01	1.41085E-01	1.29648E-01
	S.D.	(1.18175E-02)	(1.07496E-02)	(1.07496E-02)	(1.09122E-02)	(1.09122E-02)	(2.25155E-02)	(9.95614E-03)
2	Mean	4.23655E-02	4.23056E-02	4.23056E-02	4.11657E-02	4.11657E-02	4.12635E-02	4.14298E-02
	S.D.	(1.08386E-03)	(8.88747E-04)	(8.88747E-04)	(8.71465E-04)	(8.71465E-04)	(8.90259E-04)	(8.66432E-04)
3	Mean	1.34008E-02	1.33822E-02	1.33822E-02	1.30725E-02	1.30725E-02	1.30728E-02	1.30799E-02
	S.D.	(1.21880E-04)	(9.92324E-05)	(9.92324E-05)	(9.68871E-05)	(9.68871E-05)	(9.68974E-05)	(9.62652E-05)
4	Mean	1.06373E-01	1.01232E-01	1.01232E-01	9.60807E-02	9.60807E-02	3.30358E-01	1.03382E-01
	S.D.	(9.80278E-03)	(7.26031E-03)	(7.26031E-03)	(8.36242E-03)	(8.36242E-03)	(1.39042E-01)	(7.17708E-03)
4	Mean	1.05176E-01	9.84615E-02	9.84615E-02	9.45066E-02	9.45066E-02	2.81427E+00	1.00533E-01
	S.D.	(1.10711E-02)	(8.18259E-03)	(8.18259E-03)	(8.14229E-03)	(8.14229E-03)	(1.41211E+00)	(8.28537E-03)

In particular, the variance component d is underestimated using MI, while σ^2 is overestimated. The larger standard errors in this case suggest that the sample-splitting methods use information more efficiently.

Comparing computation times, the closed-form approaches are the clear winners, further enhanced by smaller standard errors. Furthermore, it follows that computing the estimates in a semi-parallel fashion, thus avoiding ‘for’ loops within the splits but using then between splits, is most efficient. Unless the n_k ’s are very large, computing all estimates at once is the most efficient. Of course, if the estimates for different splits can be done in parallel (without ‘for’ loops), this is more efficient than estimating them all at once.

A.8 The balanced conditionally independent model

In this case, one imposes the following structure on (4.33):

Table A.7.9: Second simulation study. Mean, standard deviation (S.D.) and MSE for d estimates in 100 replications for each configuration using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE.

Config.		Equal	Prop	Approx. sc.	Scalar	Approx. opt	ML
1	Mean	9.09580E-01	9.00788E-01	9.00788E-01	6.63293E-01	6.71111E-01	9.86549E-01
	S.D.	(2.66885E-01)	(2.99736E-01)	(2.99736E-01)	(2.70556E-01)	(2.79060E-01)	(2.55874E-01)
	MSE	7.86910E-02	9.87862E-02	9.87862E-02	1.85840E-01	1.85264E-01	6.49975E-02
2	Mean	9.98984E-01	9.97534E-01	9.97534E-01	9.72269E-01	9.73771E-01	1.00712E+00
	S.D.	(7.44958E-02)	(8.28143E-02)	(8.28143E-02)	(7.28186E-02)	(7.22762E-02)	(7.08463E-02)
	MSE	5.49515E-03	6.79570E-03	6.79570E-03	6.01854E-03	5.85958E-03	5.01969E-03
3	Mean	1.00004E+00	9.99697E-01	9.99697E-01	9.97218E-01	9.97153E-01	1.00019E+00
	S.D.	(2.61046E-02)	(2.82480E-02)	(2.82480E-02)	(2.48989E-02)	(2.48068E-02)	(2.44715E-02)
	MSE	6.74637E-04	7.90063E-04	7.90063E-04	6.21496E-04	6.17332E-04	5.92900E-04
4	Mean	9.40257E-01	9.50756E-01	9.50756E-01	7.65219E-01	7.65362E-01	9.96005E-01
	S.D.	(1.53414E-01)	(1.48216E-01)	(1.48216E-01)	(1.91865E-01)	(1.91614E-01)	(1.49451E-01)
	MSE	2.68697E-02	2.41734E-02	2.41734E-02	9.15661E-02	9.14038E-02	2.21282E-02
5	Mean	9.63459E-01	9.68182E-01	9.68182E-01	8.21266E-01	8.21270E-01	1.00958E+00
	S.D.	(1.73767E-01)	(1.63471E-01)	(1.63471E-01)	(1.72162E-01)	(1.72163E-01)	(1.69235E-01)
	MSE	3.12283E-02	2.74677E-02	2.74677E-02	6.12894E-02	6.12881E-02	2.84459E-02

- $X_i^{(k)}$ can be rewritten in terms of a first matrix that imposes structure between clusters (e.g., treatment effect), termed $A_i^{(k)}$, and a second one that imposes structure within clusters (e.g., time evolution), $T_i^{(k)'} = (Z_i^{(k)'}, Q_i^{(k)'})'$.
- The matrices $A_i^{(k)}$, $Z_i^{(k)}$, and $Q_i^{(k)}$ are constant among all clusters of size n_k .
- The matrix $\Sigma_i^{(k)} = \sigma^2 I_{n_k}$.

This is the general, balanced growth-curve model as studied by Lange and Laird (1989) and Verbeke and Fieuws (2007). Building on their development, we will now derive sufficient statistics and associated maximum likelihood estimators for the parameters in this model. This

Table A.7.10: Second simulation study. Mean and standard deviation (S.D.) for standard errors of d estimates in 100 replications for each configuration using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE.

Config.		Equal	Prop.	Approx. sc.	Scalar	Simple opt.	Proper opt.	ML
1	Mean	5.30888E-01	6.76159E-01	6.76159E-01	4.83519E-01	1.95328E-01	4.66561E+00	2.36408E-01
	S.D.	(1.00495E-01)	(1.66365E-01)	(1.66365E-01)	(1.10589E-01)	(4.01066E-02)	(1.40173E+00)	(3.91752E-02)
2	Mean	1.60365E-01	2.03126E-01	2.03126E-01	1.45284E-01	7.48056E-02	1.47955E+00	7.60798E-02
	S.D.	(8.29444E-03)	(1.42616E-02)	(1.42616E-02)	(8.70034E-03)	(3.35411E-03)	(1.31587E-01)	(3.26483E-03)
3	Mean	5.02596E-02	6.34861E-02	6.34861E-02	4.56061E-02	2.39463E-02	4.67989E-01	2.39748E-02
	S.D.	(8.43976E-04)	(1.44201E-03)	(1.44201E-03)	(8.34510E-04)	(3.68251E-04)	(1.24414E-02)	(3.66865E-04)
4	Mean	1.62410E-01	1.59656E-01	1.59656E-01	1.34256E-01	1.24552E-01	2.35351E-01	1.51740E-01
	S.D.	(2.83009E-02)	(2.05482E-02)	(2.05482E-02)	(2.31559E-02)	(2.51091E-02)	(3.00109E-02)	(2.11541E-02)
5	Mean	1.54122E-01	1.43313E-01	1.43313E-01	1.22117E-01	1.22024E-01	1.70868E-01	1.43764E-01
	S.D.	(3.48725E-02)	(2.50371E-02)	(2.50371E-02)	(2.30972E-02)	(2.31064E-02)	(3.70951E-02)	(2.38992E-02)

can be expressed

$$\mathbf{Y} = A(\boldsymbol{\beta}_1, \boldsymbol{\beta}_2) \begin{pmatrix} Z \\ Q \end{pmatrix} + BZ + \boldsymbol{\epsilon}.$$

Here, \mathbf{Y} is an $N \times n$ matrix stacking the outcomes of all clusters of size c , A , Z , and Q group the designs mentioned in Section 4.2.2, the vectors $\boldsymbol{\beta}_1$ and $\boldsymbol{\beta}_2$ contain the fixed effects, B contains N rows of length q , representing the q -dimensional random-effects vector, and $\boldsymbol{\epsilon}$ shares its dimensions with \mathbf{Y} .

Now, define K the projection matrix such that $K'K = I_{r-q}$, for an appropriate dimension r , and $ZK = 0$. Then, set $P = QK$ and consider the projection model:

$$\mathbf{Y}_1 \equiv YK = A\boldsymbol{\beta}_2 P + \boldsymbol{\epsilon}K.$$

The variance of a cluster is $\sigma^2 I_{r-q}$. Next, define H such that $H'H = I_q$

Table A.7.11: Second simulation study. Mean, standard deviation (S.D.) and MSE for σ^2 estimates in 100 replications for each configuration using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE.

Config.		Equal	Prop.	Approx. sc.	Scalar	Approx. opt.	ML
1	Mean	3.98608E+00	3.99739E+00	3.98571E+00	3.98364E+00	3.87487E+00	3.98075E+00
	S.D.	(2.50882E-01)	(2.95821E-01)	(2.35138E-01)	(2.33650E-01)	(2.38167E-01)	(2.30477E-01)
	MSE	6.25062E-02	8.66420E-02	5.49414E-02	5.43140E-02	7.18141E-02	5.29588E-02
2	Mean	4.00184E+00	4.00681E+00	4.00177E+00	4.00087E+00	3.99027E+00	4.00064E+00
	S.D.	(7.85190E-02)	(9.05849E-02)	(7.57443E-02)	(7.56486E-02)	(7.50477E-02)	(7.51739E-02)
	MSE	6.10698E-03	8.16998E-03	5.68296E-03	5.66624E-03	5.67055E-03	5.59502E-03
3	Mean	4.00509E+00	4.00491E+00	4.00575E+00	4.00590E+00	4.00472E+00	4.00587E+00
	S.D.	(2.45760E-02)	(2.82395E-02)	(2.36027E-02)	(2.36983E-02)	(2.37694E-02)	(2.36697E-02)
	MSE	6.23828E-04	8.13646E-04	5.84605E-04	5.90806E-04	5.81652E-04	5.89081E-04
4	Mean	4.01402E+00	4.01190E+00	4.01302E+00	4.01304E+00	4.00363E+00	4.01306E+00
	S.D.	(7.69655E-02)	(8.78962E-02)	(7.32088E-02)	(7.31202E-02)	(7.20589E-02)	(7.31207E-02)
	MSE	6.06101E-03	7.79021E-03	5.47558E-03	5.46319E-03	5.15372E-03	5.46370E-03
5	Mean	4.00346E+00	4.00338E+00	4.00292E+00	4.00292E+00	4.00192E+00	4.00292E+00
	S.D.	(2.56561E-02)	(2.79741E-02)	(2.46670E-02)	(2.46664E-02)	(2.46901E-02)	(2.46669E-02)
	MSE	6.63599E-04	7.86128E-04	6.10884E-04	6.10854E-04	6.07187E-04	6.10909E-04

and $QH = 0$. A second projection model emerges:

$$\mathbf{Y}_2 \equiv YH = A\beta_1 + B + \epsilon H.$$

The variance of a cluster is $\sigma^2 I_q + H'DH$, with D the variance-covariance matrix of the vector of random effects. Importantly, projections $\mathbf{Y}_1 \perp \mathbf{Y}_2$.

Conventional algebra leads from these to the following set of sufficient statistics:

$$T_1 = (A'A)^{-1} A' \mathbf{Y}_1 P'(PP')^{-1}, \quad (\text{A.8.1})$$

$$T_2 = \text{tr} \left\{ \mathbf{Y}'_1 \left[I - A(A'A)^{-1} A' \right] \mathbf{Y}_1 \right\}, \quad (\text{A.8.2})$$

$$T_3 = (A'A)^{-1} A' \mathbf{Y}_2, \quad (\text{A.8.3})$$

$$T_4 = \mathbf{Y}'_2 \left[I - A(A'A)^{-1} A' \right] \mathbf{Y}_2. \quad (\text{A.8.4})$$

Table A.7.12: Second simulation study. Mean and standard deviation (S.D.) for standard errors of σ^2 estimates in 100 replications for each configuration using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE.

Config.		Equal	Prop.	Approx. sc.	Scalar	Simple opt.	Proper opt.	ML
1	Mean	2.53758E-01	2.95524E-01	2.40482E-01	2.38699E-01	2.30855E-01	2.88730E+01	2.35804E-01
	S.D.	(1.98892E-02)	(3.33124E-02)	(1.45355E-02)	(1.39849E-02)	(1.38813E-02)	(6.93951E+00)	(1.34905E-02)
2	Mean	7.98210E-02	9.26570E-02	7.57927E-02	7.53242E-02	7.48395E-02	8.82494E+00	7.49872E-02
	S.D.	(1.84469E-03)	(3.08841E-03)	(1.45443E-03)	(1.42354E-03)	(1.40575E-03)	(6.92140E-01)	(1.39989E-03)
3	Mean	2.52202E-02	2.92034E-02	2.39687E-02	2.38353E-02	2.37400E-02	2.78559E+00	2.37444E-02
	S.D.	(1.85701E-04)	(3.12856E-04)	(1.42587E-04)	(1.40888E-04)	(1.40071E-04)	(6.70930E-02)	(1.39784E-04)
4	Mean	7.22378E-02	8.07793E-02	7.01684E-02	7.01663E-02	6.99970E-02	7.23107E+00	7.01238E-02
	S.D.	(1.54384E-03)	(2.35043E-03)	(1.28712E-03)	(1.28385E-03)	(1.26263E-03)	(5.28710E-01)	(1.27765E-03)
5	Mean	2.25782E-02	2.52054E-02	2.19702E-02	2.19702E-02	2.19647E-02	2.23651E+00	2.19689E-02
	S.D.	(1.55999E-04)	(2.29649E-04)	(1.35364E-04)	(1.35358E-04)	(1.35462E-04)	(5.50362E-02)	(1.35379E-04)

Sufficient statistics (A.8.1)–(A.8.4) lead to the maximum likelihood estimators:

$$\hat{\beta}_1 = T_1, \quad (\text{A.8.5})$$

$$\hat{\beta}_2 = T_3, \quad (\text{A.8.6})$$

$$\hat{\sigma}^2 = \frac{1}{N(n-q)} T_2, \quad (\text{A.8.7})$$

$$\hat{D} = \frac{1}{N} T_4 - \hat{\sigma}^2 I_q. \quad (\text{A.8.8})$$

Note that the estimators for the fixed effects do not involve the variance components.

A.9 Algebraic derivations in the AR(1) case

Here, we present more detailed derivations of the key algebraic expressions presented in Sections 4.2.2 and 4.2.3.

Table A.7.13: Second simulation study. Computation time (in seconds) using closed-form solutions with different implementation forms, compared to PROC MIXED.

Config.		Split by split			PROC MIXED
		without loops	using loops	Together	
1	Mean	0.00520	0.00980	0.00640	0.34155
	S.D.	(0.00882)	(0.00943)	(0.00823)	(0.17711)
2	Mean	0.02150	0.07340	0.05660	0.35575
	S.D.	(0.01617)	(0.02006)	(0.09662)	(0.03073)
3	Mean	0.17980	0.73480	0.43400	0.81783
	S.D.	(0.02292)	(0.05835)	(0.11543)	(0.02582)
4	Mean	0.00220	0.00610	0.00360	2.58808
	S.D.	(0.00579)	(0.01497)	(0.00689)	(0.40720)
5	Mean	0.04030	0.27490	0.02130	629.58333
	S.D.	(0.01521)	(0.01941)	(0.00872)	(116.09435)

A.9.1 Some useful expressions

Consider,

$$C = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & \rho & \rho^2 & \rho^3 & \dots \\ & 1 & \rho & \rho^2 & \dots \\ & & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots \\ & & & 1 & \rho \\ & & & & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad (\text{A.9.1})$$

then,

$$\Sigma = \sigma^2 C. \quad (\text{A.9.2})$$

Table A.7.14: Second simulation study. Mean, standard deviation (S.D.) and MSE for CS parameter estimates in 100 replications for configuration 2 using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE and MI-MLE.

	Equal	Prop.	Approx. sc.	Scalar	Approx. opt.	MI	ML
μ	Mean	-5.09643E-03	-2.62061E-03	-2.62061E-03	-2.88933E-03	-8.04195E-03	-3.28224E-03
	S.D.	(4.85424E-02)	(4.91772E-02)	(4.91772E-02)	(4.68032E-02)	(6.00662E-02)	(4.71723E-02)
	MSE	2.35877E-03	2.40108E-03	2.40108E-03	2.17698E-03	3.63654E-03	2.21375E-03
d	Mean	9.98392E-01	9.95216E-01	9.95216E-01	9.70589E-01	9.71627E-01	3.51123E-02
	S.D.	(7.33193E-02)	(7.46946E-02)	(7.46946E-02)	(7.59516E-02)	(7.53362E-02)	(1.83983E-02)
	MSE	5.32455E-03	5.54638E-03	5.54638E-03	6.57598E-03	6.42380E-03	9.31343E-01
σ^2	Mean	4.00782E+00	4.00791E+00	4.00581E+00	4.00544E+00	3.99400E+00	5.32627E+00
	S.D.	(7.66500E-02)	(8.98881E-02)	(7.19708E-02)	(7.13441E-02)	(7.19080E-02)	(1.55770E-01)
	MSE	5.87763E-03	8.06169E-03	5.16181E-03	5.06871E-03	5.15505E-03	1.78301E+00

Table A.7.15: Second simulation study. Mean and standard deviation (S.D.) for the standard error of CS parameter estimates in 100 replications for configuration 2 using different combination weights comparing with full sample MLE and MI-MLE.

	Equal	Prop.	Approx. sc.	Scalar	Simple opt.	Proper opt.	MI	ML
μ	Mean	4.24162E-02	4.22766E-02	4.22766E-02	4.11356E-02	4.11356E-02	4.95431E-02	4.14004E-02
	S.D.	(1.21548E-03)	(8.59430E-04)	(8.59430E-04)	(9.31222E-04)	(9.31222E-04)	(9.42598E-04)	(9.11785E-04)
d	Mean	1.60545E-01	2.02922E-01	2.02922E-01	1.45623E-01	7.47531E-02	1.48865E+00	9.10211E-02
	S.D.	(8.88524E-03)	(1.47416E-02)	(1.47416E-02)	(9.84170E-03)	(3.76197E-03)	(1.29914E-01)	(5.18621E-03)
σ^2	Mean	7.99442E-02	9.26315E-02	7.58626E-02	7.54139E-02	7.49171E-02	8.86450E+00	1.64310E-01
	S.D.	(1.87358E-03)	(3.14842E-03)	(1.39531E-03)	(1.34244E-03)	(1.33807E-03)	(6.56714E-01)	(2.27104E-02)

It can be shown that:

$$\det(C) = (1 - \rho^2)^{n-1} \quad (\text{A.9.3})$$

The inverse of C can be calculated as follows:

$$C^{-1} = \frac{1}{1 - \rho^2} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & -\rho & \cdots & 0 \\ -\rho & 1 + \rho^2 & \ddots & \cdots \\ \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots \\ & & 1 + \rho^2 & -\rho \\ & & -\rho & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad (\text{A.9.4})$$

as one may see C^{-1} is a symmetric-tridiagonal matrix with constant diagonal except for the outer entries, and constant first off-diagonal.

Consider:

$$C^{-1} = \frac{1}{1 - \rho^2} G. \quad (\text{A.9.5})$$

Then, by taking the derivative with respect to ρ :

$$\frac{\partial C^{-1}}{\partial \rho} = \frac{2\rho}{(1 - \rho^2)^2} G + \frac{1}{1 - \rho^2} H, \quad (\text{A.9.6})$$

where, $H = \frac{\partial G}{\partial \rho}$ and has the form:

$$H = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 & \dots & 0 \\ -1 & 2\rho & \ddots & \dots \\ \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots \\ & \ddots & 2\rho & -1 \\ 0 & & -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}. \quad (\text{A.9.7})$$

Also, considering the fact $CC^{-1} = I$, one can derive:

$$\frac{\partial C^{-1}}{\partial \rho} = -C^{-1} \frac{\partial C}{\partial \rho} C^{-1}. \quad (\text{A.9.8})$$

A.9.2 The likelihood estimators in a given cluster

The likelihood function for an n_k -dimensional multivariate normal sample of size c_k has the following form:

$$L = \prod_{i=1}^{C_k} \frac{1}{|\Sigma|^{1/2} (2\pi)^{n_k/2}} \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{2} (y_i - \mu_i)' \Sigma^{-1} (y_i - \mu_i) \right\}. \quad (\text{A.9.9})$$

Therefore, the non-constant terms of the log-likelihood are as follows:

$$\ell \propto -\frac{C_k}{2} \ln |\Sigma| \cdot \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} (y_i - \mu_i)' \Sigma^{-1} (y_i - \mu_i), \quad (\text{A.9.10})$$

which considering (A.9.3) for AR(1):

$$|\Sigma| = (\sigma^2)^{n_k} (1 - \rho^2)^{n_k - 1}. \quad (\text{A.9.11})$$

As a general case, if we consider the mean as linear model with the form $\mu_i = X_i \beta$, one can derive:

$$\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \mu_i} = \Sigma^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} (y_i - \mu_i) = 0 \Rightarrow \hat{\beta} = (X' X)^{-1} X' y. \quad (\text{A.9.12})$$

Now expanding the log-likelihood for σ^2 and ρ , we have:

$$\ell \propto -\frac{C_k}{2} n_k \ln \sigma^2 - \frac{C_k}{2} (n_k - 1) \ln(1 - \rho^2) - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} (y_i - \mu_i)' \Sigma^{-1} (y_i - \mu_i). \quad (\text{A.9.13})$$

Considering $\Sigma = \sigma^2 C$ and (A.9.4), the derivative with respect to σ^2 is as follows:

$$\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \sigma^2} = -\frac{C_k n_k}{2} \frac{1}{\sigma^2} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{(\sigma^2)^2} \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} (y_i - \mu_i)' C^{-1} (y_i - \mu_i). \quad (\text{A.9.14})$$

Solving $\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \sigma^2} = 0$ gives:

$$\hat{\sigma}^2 = \frac{1}{C_k n_k} \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} (y_i - \mu_i)' C^{-1} (y_i - \mu_i). \quad (\text{A.9.15})$$

One may notice that C^{-1} contains the parameter ρ .

Taking the derivative of (A.9.13) with respect to ρ gives:

$$\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \rho} = \frac{C_k(n_k - 1)}{2} \frac{2\rho}{1 - \rho^2} - \frac{1}{\sigma^2} \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} (y_i - \mu_i)' \frac{\partial C^{-1}}{\partial \rho} (y_i - \mu_i). \quad (\text{A.9.16})$$

Setting $\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \rho} = 0$ gives:

$$\hat{\sigma}^2 \frac{2\hat{\rho}}{1 - \hat{\rho}^2} = \frac{1}{C_k(n_k - 1)} \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} (y_i - \mu_i)' \frac{\partial C^{-1}}{\partial \rho} (y_i - \mu_i). \quad (\text{A.9.17})$$

Solving (A.9.15) and (A.9.17) gives $\hat{\sigma}^2$ and $\hat{\rho}$. For any $(n_k \times n_k)$ matrix Q , $\sum_i (y_i - \mu_i)' Q (y_i - \mu_i)$ equals $\text{tr}\{SQ\}$, where tr denotes the trace of a matrix, and $S = \sum_i (y_i - \mu_i)(y_i - \mu_i)'$. Hence, from (A.9.15), (A.9.17),

(A.9.5), (A.9.6), and (A.9.8), one can write:

$$\begin{cases} (1 - \hat{\rho}^2)\hat{\sigma}^2 = \frac{1}{C_k n_k} \text{tr}\{SG\}, \\ (1 - \hat{\rho}^2)\hat{\sigma}^2 = \frac{1}{C_k n_k} \text{tr}\{SG\} + \frac{1 - \hat{\rho}^2}{2\hat{\rho}} \frac{1}{C_k(n_k-1)} \frac{1}{C_k(n_k-1)} \text{tr}\{SH\}. \end{cases} \quad (\text{A.9.18})$$

Set $g = \text{tr}\{SG\}$ and $h = \text{tr}\{SH\}$, it follows that

$$\frac{g}{n_k} + \frac{1 - \hat{\rho}^2}{2\hat{\rho}} h = 0. \quad (\text{A.9.19})$$

Given that both g and h are functions of ρ only, ρ can be estimated using (A.9.19). Given ρ , one can use one of equations in (A.9.18) to estimate σ^2 .

Let us consider some special cases. For $n_k = 2$:

$$G = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & -\rho \\ -\rho & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad H = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Therefore, g and h can be computed as:

$$g = \text{tr} \left[\begin{pmatrix} S_{11} & S_{12} \\ S_{21} & S_{22} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & -\rho \\ -\rho & 1 \end{pmatrix} \right] = S_{11} - 2\rho S_{12} + S_{22}.$$

$$h = \text{tr} \left[\begin{pmatrix} S_{11} & S_{12} \\ S_{21} & S_{22} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right] = -2S_{12}.$$

Now using (A.9.19):

$$\hat{\rho}(S_{11} - 2\hat{\rho}S_{12} + S_{22} + (1 - \hat{\rho}^2)(-2S_{12}),$$

which gives:

$$\hat{\rho} = \frac{2S_{12}}{S_{11} + S_{22}}. \quad (\text{A.9.20})$$

Then, using first equation in (A.9.18):

$$(1 - \hat{\rho}^2)\hat{\sigma}^2 = \frac{1}{2C_k}(S_{11} - 2\hat{\rho}S_{12} + S_{22}),$$

which gives:

$$\hat{\sigma}^2 = \frac{S_{11} + S_{22}}{2C_k}. \quad (\text{A.9.21})$$

For $n_k = 3$:

$$\begin{aligned} g &= \text{tr} \left[\begin{pmatrix} S_{11} & S_{12} & S_{13} \\ S_{21} & S_{22} & S_{23} \\ S_{31} & S_{32} & S_{33} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & -\rho & 0 \\ -\rho & 1 + \rho^2 - \rho & \\ 0 & -\rho & 1 \end{pmatrix} \right] \\ &= S_{11} + S_{22} + S_{33} - 2\rho(S_{12} + S_{23}) + \rho^2 S_{22}, \\ h &= \text{tr} \left[\begin{pmatrix} S_{11} & S_{12} & S_{13} \\ S_{21} & S_{22} & S_{23} \\ S_{31} & S_{32} & S_{33} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 & 0 \\ -1 & 2\rho & -1 \\ 0 & -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right] \\ &= -2(S_{12} + S_{23}) + 2\rho S_{22}. \end{aligned}$$

Let,

$$\begin{cases} S = S_{11} + S_{22} + S_{33} \\ R = S_{12} + S_{23} \end{cases} \Rightarrow \begin{cases} g = S + \rho^2 S_{22} - 2\rho R \\ h = -2R + 2\rho S_{22} \end{cases}$$

Using (A.9.19):

$$2S_{22}\rho^3 - R\rho^2 - (S + 3S_{22})\rho + 3R = 0. \quad (\text{A.9.22})$$

Considering the results for $n_k = 2$ and $n_k = 3$, one can calculate (A.9.19) for the general case $n_k = n$ as follows.

$$(n-1)\tilde{S}\rho^3 - (n-2)R\rho^2 - (n\tilde{S} + S)\rho + nR = 0 \quad (\text{A.9.23})$$

with:

$$\begin{cases} S = S_{11} + \dots + S_{nn}, \\ \tilde{S} = S_{22} + \dots + S_{n-1,n-1}, \\ R = S_{12} + S_{23} + \dots + S_{n-1,n}. \end{cases}$$

Then using (A.9.18):

$$\hat{\sigma}^2 = \frac{1}{C_n} \frac{1}{(1 - \hat{\rho}^2)} (S + \hat{\rho}^2 \tilde{S} - 2\hat{\rho}R). \quad (\text{A.9.24})$$

For $n_k > 2$, (A.9.23) is a third-degree polynomial. One can show that this equation has only one root in $[-1, 1]$.

Proof. Consider:

$$\begin{aligned} f(\rho) &= (n-1)\tilde{S}\rho^3 - (n-2)R\rho^2 - (n\tilde{S} + S)\rho + nR \\ f'(\rho) &= 3(n-1)\tilde{S}\rho^2 - 2(n-2)R\rho - (n\tilde{S} + S) \\ f''(\rho) &= 6(n-1)\tilde{S}\rho - 2(n-2)R \end{aligned}$$

The discriminant of $f'(\rho)$ is as follows:

$$\Delta_{f'(\rho)} = (n-2)^2 R^2 + 3(n\tilde{S} + S)(n-1)\tilde{S} \geq 0.$$

Therefore $f'(\rho)$ has no root and hence $f(\rho)$ is monotone. One may see $f'(0) \leq 0$, therefore, $f(\rho)$ is a monotonically decreasing function (I). One can show $f(1) \leq 0$ and $f(-1) \geq 0$ (II). Considering (I) and (II) together, one may conclude $f(\rho)$ must necessarily cross the horizontal line only once between $[-1, 1]$. \square

This shows the unique $\hat{\rho}$ can be easily estimated solving (A.9.23) using Cardano's formula (Franci and Rigatelli, 1979).

A.9.3 Hessians, covariance matrices, and optimal weights

Given the MLEs for the AR(1) covariance structure, the Hessians and covariance matrices of the MLEs can be derived. Following the general results obtained about optimal weights, they can be used to compute the exact optimal weights in the case of the AR(1) structure. As mean and variance parameters are orthogonal in the normal case, we can

consider the second derivative for fixed effects and variance components separately.

Second derivative with respect to fixed effects

As

$$\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \beta} = \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} X_i' \Sigma^{-1} (y_i - \mu_i),$$

we have:

$$\begin{aligned} E \left[\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \beta} \left(\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \beta} \right)' \right] &= \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} X_i' \Sigma^{-1} E(y_i - \mu_i)(y_i - \mu_i)' \Sigma^{-1} X_i \\ &= \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} X_i' \Sigma^{-1} X_i. \end{aligned}$$

For the special case of just an intercept $X_i = \mathbf{1}$:

$$\begin{aligned} E \left[\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \beta} \left(\frac{\partial \ell}{\partial \beta} \right)' \right] &= \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} \mathbf{1}' \Sigma^{-1} \mathbf{1} = \\ &= \frac{C_k}{\sigma^2(1-\rho^2)} [(n_k - 2)\rho^2 - 2(n_k - 1)\rho + n_k]. \quad (\text{A.9.25}) \end{aligned}$$

Therefore, the variance for $\hat{\mu}$ can be computed as inverse of (A.9.25).

Second derivative with respect to variance components

To calculate the derivatives with respect to variance components rather than $\frac{\partial C^{-1}}{\partial \rho}$, we need $K = \frac{\partial C^{-1}}{\partial \rho^2}$. Using these derivatives:

$$\begin{cases} \frac{\partial}{\partial \rho} 2 \left(\frac{\rho}{1-\rho^2} \right) = 2 \frac{1+\rho^2}{(1-\rho^2)^2}, \\ \frac{\partial}{\partial \rho} \frac{\rho}{(1-\rho^2)^2} = \frac{1+3\rho^2}{(1-\rho^2)^3}, \\ \frac{\partial}{\partial \rho} \frac{1+\rho^2}{(1-\rho^2)^2} = \frac{2\rho(3+\rho^2)}{(1-\rho^2)^3}. \end{cases} \quad (\text{A.9.26})$$

it follows that

$$\frac{\partial C^{-1}}{\partial \rho^2} = K = \frac{1}{(1-\rho^2)^3} \begin{pmatrix} 2(1+3\rho^2) & -2\rho(3+\rho^2) & 0 & \dots \\ -2\rho(3+\rho^2) & 4(1+3\rho^2) & \ddots & \ddots \\ \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots \\ 0 & -2\rho(3+\rho^2) & 2(1+3\rho^2). \end{pmatrix} \quad (\text{A.9.27})$$

The second-derivatives are:

$$\begin{cases} \frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial (\sigma^2)^2} = \frac{C_k n_k}{2} \frac{1}{(\sigma^2)^2} - \frac{1}{(\sigma^2)^3} \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} (y_i - \mu_i)' C^{-1} (y_i - \mu_i), \\ \frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \rho^2} = \frac{C_k(n_k-1)(1+\rho^2)}{(1-\rho^2)^2} - \frac{1}{2\sigma^2} \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} (y_i - \mu_i)' K (y_i - \mu_i), \\ \frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \rho \partial \sigma^2} = \frac{1}{2(\sigma^2)^2} \sum_{i=1}^{C_k} (y_i - \mu_i)' \frac{\partial C^{-1}}{\partial \rho} (y_i - \mu_i). \end{cases} \quad (\text{A.9.28})$$

To construct the expected Hessian and covariance matrix, one needs to find the expectations of the expressions in (A.9.28).

$$\mathbb{E} \left(\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial (\sigma^2)^2} \right) = -\frac{C_k n_k}{2} \frac{1}{(\sigma^2)^2}. \quad (\text{A.9.29})$$

This follows from the fact that:

$$\mathbb{E} \left(\sum_{i=1}^{C_k} (y_i - \mu_i)' C^{-1} (y_i - \mu_i) \right) = C_k \text{tr} \left\{ \mathbb{E} [(y_i - \mu_i)' (y_i - \mu_i)] C^{-1} \right\},$$

and $\mathbb{E} [(y_i - \mu_i)(y_i - \mu_i)'] = \sigma^2 C$.

For the second derivative with respect to ρ :

$$\mathbb{E} \left[\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \rho^2} \right] = \frac{C_k (n_k - 1)(1 + \rho^2)}{(1 - \rho^2)^2} - \frac{C_k}{2} \text{tr} \{ K S \}. \quad (\text{A.9.30})$$

Likewise:

$$\mathbb{E} \left[\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \rho \partial \sigma^2} \right] = \frac{C_k}{2\sigma^2} \text{tr} \left\{ C \frac{\partial C^{-1}}{\partial \rho} \right\}. \quad (\text{A.9.31})$$

Substituting for $\text{tr}\{K S\}$ and $\text{tr} \left\{ C \frac{\partial C^{-1}}{\partial \rho} \right\}$ we get:

$$\mathbb{E} \left[\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \rho \partial \sigma^2} \right] = \frac{C_k (n_k - 1)}{\sigma^2} \frac{\rho}{1 - \rho^2}. \quad (\text{A.9.32})$$

$$\mathbb{E} \left[\frac{\partial^2 \ell}{\partial \rho^2} \right] = -C_k (n_k - 1) \frac{1 + \rho^2}{(1 - \rho^2)^2}. \quad (\text{A.9.33})$$

Using (A.9.29), (A.9.32), and (A.9.33) one obtains the 2×2 Hessian matrix as follows:

$$H = -C_k \begin{pmatrix} \frac{n_k}{2(\sigma^2)^2} & -\frac{n_k-1}{\sigma^2} \frac{\rho}{1-\rho^2} \\ -\frac{n_k-1}{\sigma^2} \frac{\rho}{1-\rho^2} & (n_k-1) \frac{1+\rho^2}{(1-\rho^2)^2} \end{pmatrix}. \quad (\text{A.9.34})$$

The determinant of the Hessian in (A.9.34) is as follows:

$$\det(H) = \frac{C_k^2(n_k-1)(n_k-(n_k-2)\rho^2)}{2(\sigma^2)^2(1-\rho^2)^2}. \quad (\text{A.9.35})$$

So,

$$-H^{-1} = \frac{1}{C_k(n_k-(n_k-2)\rho^2)} \begin{pmatrix} 2(\sigma^2)^2(1+\rho^2) & 2\rho\sigma^2(1-\rho^2) \\ 2\rho\sigma^2(1-\rho^2) & \frac{n_k}{n_k-1}(1-\rho^2)^2 \end{pmatrix}. \quad (\text{A.9.36})$$

The Hessian for the unbiased estimator differs slightly from its MLE counterpart:

$$\tilde{H} = -C_k \begin{pmatrix} \frac{n_k-1}{2(\sigma^2)^2} & -\frac{n_k-1}{\sigma^2} \frac{\rho}{1-\rho^2} \\ -\frac{n_k-1}{\sigma^2} \frac{\rho}{1-\rho^2} & (n_k-1) \frac{1+\rho^2}{(1-\rho^2)^2} \end{pmatrix}, \quad (\text{A.9.37})$$

$$\det(\tilde{H}) = \frac{C_k^2(n_k-1)^2}{2(\sigma^2)^2(1-\rho^2)}. \quad (\text{A.9.38})$$

Therefore,

$$-\tilde{H}^{-1} = \frac{1}{C_k(n_k - (n_k - 2)\rho^2)} \begin{pmatrix} 2(\sigma^2)^2(1 + \rho^2) & 2\rho\sigma^2(1 - \rho^2) \\ 2\rho\sigma^2(1 - \rho^2) & (1 - \rho^2)^2 \end{pmatrix}. \quad (\text{A.9.39})$$

Having the covariance matrix, one may easily find the optimal weights using

$$W_{opt.} = \frac{V_k^{-1}}{\sum_{i=1}^K V_i^{-1}} \quad (\text{A.9.40})$$

The variance of an estimator obtained using the optimal weights in (A.9.40) can be calculated as $\left(\sum_{i=1}^K V_i^{-1}\right)^{-1}$.

A.9.4 Proof of Proposition 4.1

Proof. Consider an estimator of the form:

$$\tilde{\mu}_\alpha = \frac{1}{c} \sum_{i=1}^c \sum_{j=1}^n \alpha_j Y_{ij}, \quad (\text{A.9.41})$$

for a vector of weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n)'$. Because the clusters are i.i.d. it is evident that the components of $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ do not depend on the cluster index i . Clearly, the requirement that $E(\tilde{\mu}_\alpha) = \mu$ implies the condition

$$\sum_{j=1}^n \alpha_j = 1. \quad (\text{A.9.42})$$

An expression of the variance of $\tilde{\mu}_\alpha$ combined with this requirement

produces the objective function:

$$Q = \sigma^2 \left(\sum_{j=1}^n \alpha_j^2 + 2 \sum_{j < k} \alpha_j \alpha_k \rho^{|j-k|} \right) - \lambda \left(\sum_{j=1}^n \alpha_j - 1 \right), \quad (\text{A.9.43})$$

with λ a Lagrange multiplier. Taking the derivative of (A.9.43) w.r.t. $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ leads to, after rearrangement:

$$\boldsymbol{\alpha} = \frac{\lambda}{2\sigma^2} C^{-1} \mathbf{1}.$$

Given that we have an explicit form for C^{-1} , it follows that

$$\boldsymbol{\alpha} = \frac{\lambda}{2\sigma^2(1+\rho)} \boldsymbol{\rho}^{(1)}, \quad (\text{A.9.44})$$

with $\boldsymbol{\rho}^{(1)} = (1, 1-\rho, \dots, 1-\rho, 1)'$. Combining (A.9.44) with constraint (A.9.42) leads to $\lambda = 2\sigma^2(1+\rho)/[2 + (n-2)(1-\rho)]$, hence

$$\alpha = \frac{1}{[2 + (n-2)(1-\rho)]} \boldsymbol{\rho}^{(1)},$$

establishing the MLE. This completes the proof.

A.9.5 Optimal weights in case of a general mean structure $X_i^{(k)} \boldsymbol{\beta}$

Cluster size specific expressions are:

$$\widehat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_k = \left(\sum_{i=1}^{c_k} X_i^{(k)'} \Sigma_k^{-1} X_i^{(k)} \right)^{-1} \left(\sum_{i=1}^{c_k} X_i^{(k)'} \Sigma_k^{-1} Y_i^{(k)} \right) \quad (\text{A.9.45})$$

and

$$\text{var}(\widehat{\beta}_k) = V_k = \left(\sum_{i=1}^{c_k} X_i^{(k)'} \Sigma_k^{-1} X_i^{(k)} \right)^{-1}. \quad (\text{A.9.46})$$

The combination rule is

$$\tilde{\beta}_k = \sum_{i=1}^K A_k \widehat{\beta}_k, \quad (\text{A.9.47})$$

with

$$V_k^{-1} = \frac{1}{\sigma^2} \sum_{i=1}^{c_k} X_i^{(k)'} C_k^{-1} X_i^{(k)} \quad (\text{A.9.48})$$

and C_k is as described in Supplementary Materials A.9.1.

The first factor in (A.9.45) can be split into three parts:

$$(1 - \rho^2) X_i^{(k)'} C_k^{-1} X_i^{(k)} = X_i^{(k)'} (1 + \rho^2) I_k X_i^{(k)}$$

$$- \rho^2 X_i^{(k)'} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & \dots & \dots & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & & & \vdots \\ \vdots & & \ddots & & \\ \vdots & & & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \dots & \dots & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} X_i^{(k)}$$

$$- \rho X_i^{(k)'} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 & \dots & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & \ddots & & \vdots \\ 0 & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & 0 \\ \vdots & & \ddots & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & \dots & 0 & 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} X_i^{(k)}.$$

(A.9.5) simplifies to $(1 + \rho^2) X_i^{(k)'} X_i^{(k)}$, while (A.9.5) equals

$$\rho^2 \begin{pmatrix} x_{ki11}^2 + x_{kin_k 1}^2 & x_{ki11} \cdot x_{ki22} + x_{kin_k 1} \cdot x_{kin_k 2} & \dots & x_{ki11} \cdot x_{ki1p} + x_{kin_k 1} \cdot x_{kin_k p} \\ & x_{ki12}^2 + x_{kin_k 2}^2 & & \\ & & \ddots & \\ & & & x_{ki1p}^2 + x_{kin_k p}^2 \end{pmatrix}. \quad (\text{A.9.49})$$

Defining $\mathbf{X}_{i1}^{(k)} = (x_{ki11} \ \dots \ x_{ki1p})^t$ and $\mathbf{X}_{in_k}^{(k)} = (x_{kin_k 1} \ \dots \ x_{kin_k p})^t$,

(A.9.5) equals

$$\rho^2 [\mathbf{X}_{i1}^{(k)} \ 0 \dots 0 \ \mathbf{X}_{in_k}^{(k)}] X_i^{(k)}. \quad (\text{A.9.50})$$

For the third term, define $\mathbf{X}_{ij}^{(k)-} = (x_{ki2j} \dots x_{kin_k j})^t$ and $\mathbf{X}_{ij}^{(k)+} = (x_{ki1j} \dots x_{kin_{k-1} j})^t$. As a consequence, (A.9.5) will equal

$$-\rho[X_i^{(k)-'} \cdot X_i^{(k)+} + X_i^{(k)+'} \cdot X_i^{(k)-}]. \quad (\text{A.9.51})$$

In summary:

$$\begin{aligned} (1 - \rho^2) X_i^{(k)'} C_k^{-1} X_i^{(k)} &= (1 + \rho^2) X_i^{(k)'} X_i^{(k)} \\ &\quad - \rho^2 [\mathbf{X}_{i1}^{(k)} \ 0 \dots 0 \ \mathbf{X}_{in_k}^{(k)}] X_i^{(k)} \\ &\quad - \rho [X_i^{(k)-'} \cdot X_i^{(k)+} + X_i^{(k)+'} \cdot X_i^{(k)-}] \\ &\stackrel{\text{notation}}{=} F_{1k}. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.9.52})$$

The second factor in (A.9.45), using the same notations for $Y_i^{(k)}$ as

described above, can be rewritten as:

$$\begin{aligned}
 (1 - \rho^2) X_i^{(k)'} C_k^{-1} Y_i^{(k)} &= (1 + \rho^2) X_i^{(k)'} Y_i^{(k)} \\
 &\quad - \rho^2 \begin{pmatrix} x_{ki11} \cdot y_{ki1} + x_{kin_k1} \cdot y_{kin_k} \\ x_{ki12} \cdot y_{ki1} + x_{kin_k2} \cdot y_{kin_k} \\ \vdots \\ x_{ki1p} \cdot y_{ki1} + x_{kin_kp} \cdot y_{kin_k} \end{pmatrix} \\
 &\quad - \rho [X_i^{(k)-'} \cdot Y_i^{(k)+} + X_i^{(k)+'} \cdot Y_i^{(k)-}] \\
 &\stackrel{\text{not.}}{=} F_{2k}.
 \end{aligned} \tag{A.9.53}$$

Combining (A.9.52) and (A.9.53) the overall estimate equals:

$$\begin{aligned}
 \tilde{\beta}_k &= \sum_{i=1}^K A_k \widehat{\beta}_k \\
 &= \sum_{i=1}^K \left(\sum_{m=1}^K F_{1m} \right)^{-1} F_{2k}
 \end{aligned} \tag{A.9.54}$$

A.9.6 Delta method for the mean estimator

By plugging in ρ_k and defining $a'_k = c_k[n_k - (n_k - 2)\rho_k]$, equation (A.9.55) simplifies to

$$a_k = \frac{a'_k}{\sum_{m=1}^K a'_m}, \tag{A.9.55}$$

and (4.55) becomes

$$\text{var}(\hat{\mu}_k) = v_k = \frac{\sigma_k^2(1 + \rho_k)}{a'_k}. \quad (\text{A.9.56})$$

The first derivatives equal

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial \tilde{\mu}}{\partial \mu_k} &= a_k = \frac{a'_k}{\sum_{m=1}^K a'_m}, \\ \frac{\partial \tilde{\mu}}{\partial \sigma_k^2} &= 0, \\ \frac{\partial \tilde{\mu}}{\partial \rho_k} &= \frac{-c_k(n_k - 2) \sum_{m=1}^K a'_m(\mu_k - \mu_m)}{\left(\sum_{m=1}^K a'_m\right)^2}, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.9.57})$$

and these can be combined using the delta method, resulting in (4.61):

$$\begin{aligned} \text{var}(\tilde{\mu}) &= \sum_{i=1}^K \frac{a_k'^2}{\left(\sum_{k=1}^K a'_k\right)^2} \cdot \frac{\sigma_k^2(1 - \rho_k^2)}{a'_k} \\ &\quad + \frac{\sum_{k=1}^K \left[c_k(n_k - 2) \sum_{m=1}^K a'_m(\mu_k - \mu_m)\right]^2}{\left(\sum_{k=1}^K a'_k\right)^4} \cdot \frac{1 - \rho_k^2}{c_k(n_k - 1)}. \end{aligned}$$

A.9.7 Calculating $\hat{\rho}$ and $\hat{\sigma}^2$ in R

In this section, we consider the implementation of the calculations for the variance components via the R package `fastAR1`. This can be done with a few simple lines of code. For fixed $C_k = C$ and $n_k = n$, and given the data y , the function `est.ar1` estimates the variance components and provides a plot for the third-degree polynomial in (A.9.23). This

visually underscores that there is only one root in $[-1, 1]$. Figure A.9.14 shows (A.9.23) for 10 simulated data sets; clearly, there is a single root only in $[-1, 1]$. For convenience, the R code can be obtained via R package `fastAR1`, see Section 8.2. Other functions to find variances and iterated optimal weights are also available.

A.10 Details on additional simulations

A.10.1 Simulations with proportional and size-proportional weights

Here we consider $C_1 = 500, C_2 = 250, C_3 = 250, C_4 = 500$, and $n_1 = 5, n_2 = 10, n_3 = 10, n_4 = 5$. Parameters are set to $\mu = 0, \sigma = 2$ and $\rho = (0.1, 0.5, 0.8)$. The data are generated 100 times and the model is fitted using PROC MIXED in SAS (for a single overall intercept). For combining the results from different sub-samples we have used proportional weights and size-proportional weights:

$$\begin{cases} \text{Prop} = \frac{C_k}{\sum_l C_l}, \\ \text{Size.Prop} = \frac{C_k n_k}{\sum_l C_l n_l}. \end{cases} \quad (\text{A.10.1})$$

The results are compared with full likelihood (Table A.10.16). In contrast to the compound-symmetry case, the size-proportional weights show much better results than the proportional weights. Furthermore, the size-proportional weights in the current simulation are identical with the equal weights. The n_k 's have a much larger influence in the AR(1)

Table A.10.16: Comparing proportional, size-proportional and iterated optimal weights with full likelihood for AR(1) covariance structure.

		$\hat{\mu}$	Sd	$\hat{\rho}$	Sd	$\hat{\sigma}^2$	Sd
$\rho = 0.1$	Prop.	-0.00190	0.01615	0.10027	0.01158	1.99642	0.03002
	Size.Prop.	-0.00207	0.01538	0.10024	0.01080	1.99793	0.02853
	It.Opt.	-0.00206	0.01538	0.10024	0.00993	1.99792	0.02850
	ML	-0.00207	0.01538	0.10032	0.01078	1.99793	0.02850
$\rho = 0.5$	Prop.	-0.00212	0.02221	0.49966	0.00954	2.00349	0.03652
	Size.Prop	-0.00155	0.02156	0.49955	0.00898	2.00257	0.03494
	It.Opt.	-0.00168	0.02149	0.49956	0.00826	2.00265	0.03486
	ML	-0.00170	0.02150	0.49986	0.00896	2.00259	0.03488
$\rho = 0.8$	Prop.	0.00195	0.02890	0.79923	0.00549	1.99529	0.04989
	Size.Prop	0.00234	0.02904	0.79911	0.00530	1.99542	0.04907
	It.Opt.	0.00213	0.02855	0.79915	0.00486	1.99538	0.04859
	ML	0.00212	0.02855	0.79937	0.00527	1.99519	0.04861

case compared to CS. Figures A.10.15, A.10.16, and A.10.17 make the comparisons easier.

A.10.2 Simulations with proportional and size-proportional weights: ρ near 0/1

We now present a comparison between proportional and size-proportional weights. We see that, for ρ 's near 1 (i.e., near CS), size-proportional weights are worse than proportional weights.

We consider $c_1 = 500$, $c_2 = 250$, $c_3 = 250$, $c_4 = 500$, and $n_1 = 5$, $n_2 = 10$, $n_3 = 10$, $n_4 = 5$. Parameters are set as $\mu = 0$, $\sigma = 2$ and $\rho \in \{0.01, 0.2, 0.5, 0.8, 0.9, 0.95, 0.99\}$. The data are generated 100 times and the model is fitted using PROC MIXED in SAS (for a single overall intercept). For combining results from different sub-samples we have

used proportional weights and size-proportional weights as in (A.10.1). The results are compared with full likelihood results.

In Figure A.10.18, for $\rho = 0.99$ and 0.95 , the size-proportional weights perform worse than the proportional weights. This is expected, because in this case AR(1) approaches CS. This result is clearer in the left panel of Figure A.10.18, where the standard deviations are shown. For ρ 's near 1, the proportional weights are as efficient as full likelihood, while as ρ moves further from 1 this would happen for size-proportional weights.

Figure A.10.19 shows this phenomenon more clearly, as for some selected ρ 's ($0.01, 0.5, 0.95$) the density plot for all 100 simulated datasets is plotted rather than a boxplot. The size-proportional weights are better than proportional weights if ρ is not very close to 1. As soon as ρ becomes 0.95 or 0.99, the size-proportional weights become worse.

A.10.3 Simulations with optimal weights

Given the covariance matrix of the parameter estimators, finding the optimal weights is straightforward, but in practice the unknown parameters therein need to be estimated. Here we compare the iterative weights with size-proportional weights and ML. See Figures A.10.20, A.10.21, A.10.22, and Table A.10.16. As expected, the optimal weights lead to estimates very close to the MLE; the difference between them being numerical.

Size-proportional weights are used as the initial weights to begin the

iterative procedure. One interesting outcome of this simulation is that the iterative procedure always converged after just one iteration. This means, iterated optimal weights are just like the approximated optimal weights, but there, instead of using $\hat{\theta}_k$ from each sub-sample, one may use $\tilde{\theta}$ obtained from all sub-samples using a non-optimal but good weight.

A.10.4 Simulations on computation time

Here, some summary tables are presented to summarize the results which are already presented via figures earlier. Furthermore, a table and a figure are added to compare computation time for closed form solutions to numerical ones.

In each table the mean of the estimated parameter and its standard deviation using the 100 replications are given, together with the standard deviation of those 100 numbers (in parentheses). If θ is the parameter of interest, $\hat{\theta}$ is its estimate and θ_0 is its real value, then the MSE is computed as follows:

$$\text{MSE}(\hat{\theta}) = \frac{1}{100} \sum_{i=1}^{100} (\hat{\theta} - \theta_0)^2. \quad (\text{A.10.2})$$

Table A.10.17 summarizes the results for μ . The sample splitting estimates are computed using proportional and size-proportional (identical to equal weights in this case) weights. The results using the full sample are also given. The third column in Table A.10.17 presents the averaged (over 100 replications) estimated μ and its standard deviation. The

fourth column presents the averaged estimated standard deviation for $\hat{\mu}$ (over 100 replications) and its standard deviation. The last column shows the MSE computed using (A.10.2) for $\mu_0 = 1$. Tables A.10.18 and A.10.19 shows the same results for ρ and σ^2 ($\sigma_0^2 = 2$), respectively.

Table A.10.20 compares the computation time between closed-form and interative methods. The closed-form solutions are implemented in R and for the numerical methods the MIXED procedure in SAS is used, with error covariance structure set to AR(1).

The data are generated using $n = 10$ for all clusters, with c is varying from 100 to 1000000. Therefore, the design is balanced and the point of this comparison is to see how the computation time is reduced in each split.

As one may see in Table A.10.20 and Figure A.10.23, using closed form solutions significantly reduces the computation time. This means, as well as the computation time reduction due to splitting the data, using closed form solutions within each split the computation time reduction is also huge: for example, for a million clusters, the reduction is from almost one hour to less than 5 seconds. Figure A.10.23 shows that computation time using closed form solution changes linearly with the number of clusters, while this will be exponential using an iterative solution.

To assess the effect of the overall size of the dataset, the model is fitted to two concatenated copies of the same set. Computation time results are

presented in Table A.10.20 and Figure A.10.23. The data are generated with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$, and $\rho = 0.25$.

Table A.10.17: Simulation study. Estimating μ and its standard deviation. The mean (standard deviation) of the 100 replications are given together with mean squared errors for $\rho = 0.01, 0.2, 0.5, 0.8, 0.9, 0.99$ using proportional and size-proportional weights comparing with the full likelihood results.

ρ_0	method	mean($\hat{\mu}$) (s.d.)	mean(s.e.($\hat{\mu}$)) (s.d.)	MSE $\times 10^4$
0.01	Prop.	-0.00271 (0.01462)	0.01503 (0.00020)	2.19000
	Size Prop.	-0.00277 (0.01320)	0.01429 (0.00018)	1.80172
	Full	-0.00275 (0.01319)	0.01428 (0.00018)	1.79828
0.2	Prop.	0.00158 (0.01677)	0.01752 (0.00025)	2.81056
	Size Prop.	0.00085 (0.01616)	0.01673 (0.00021)	2.59147
	Full	0.00090 (0.01615)	0.01672 (0.00021)	2.58880
0.5	Prop.	0.00391 (0.02244)	0.02217 (0.00037)	5.13770
	Size Prop.	0.00397 (0.02191)	0.02155 (0.00035)	4.91201
	Full	0.00396 (0.02182)	0.02148 (0.00034)	4.87038
0.8	Prop.	0.00130 (0.02790)	0.02894 (0.00050)	7.72450
	Size Prop.	-0.00049 (0.02710)	0.02912 (0.00045)	7.27464
	Full	0.00053 (0.02713)	0.02862 (0.00045)	7.29130
0.9	Prop.	-0.00828 (0.03006)	0.03221 (0.00056)	9.63393
	Size Prop.	-0.00727 (0.03145)	0.03306 (0.00070)	10.3224
	Full	-0.00803 (0.02998)	0.03207 (0.00057)	9.54258
0.99	Prop.	0.00162 (0.03663)	0.03597 (0.00064)	13.3123e
	Size Prop.	-0.00007 (0.03930)	0.03797 (0.00088)	15.2876
	Full	0.00156 (0.03666)	0.03597 (0.00064)	13.3305

A.11 Details on PANSS data analysis

As one may see from Table A.11.21, by far the majority of the study subjects have complete data and hence belong to the first pattern.

Figure A.11.24 presents boxplots for the entire set of data, for the

Table A.10.18: Simulation study. Estimating ρ and its standard deviation. The mean (standard deviation) of the 100 replications are given together with mean squared errors for $\rho = 0.01, 0.2, 0.5, 0.8, 0.9, 0.99$ using proportional and size-proportional weights comparing with the full likelihood results.

ρ_0	method	mean($\hat{\rho}$) (s.e.)	mean(s.e.($\hat{\rho}$)) (s.e.)	MSE
0.01	Prop.	0.01077 (0.01237)	0.01165 (0.00006)	1.52178e-04
	Size Prop.	0.01115 (0.01200)	0.01087 (0.00004)	1.43974e-04
	Full	0.01123 (0.01203)	0.01084 (0.00004)	1.44675e-04
0.2	Prop.	0.19960 (0.01213)	0.01133 (0.00007)	1.45806e-04
	Size Prop.	0.19973 (0.01145)	0.01058 (0.00005)	1.29974e-04
	Full	0.19986 (0.01142)	0.01056 (0.00005)	1.29174e-04
0.5	Prop.	0.49956 (0.00963)	0.00954 (0.00011)	9.19119e-05
	Size Prop.	0.49965 (0.00904)	0.00898 (0.00008)	8.11057e-05
	Full	0.49990 (0.00904)	0.00896 (0.00008)	8.08877e-05
0.8	Prop.	0.79973 (0.00541)	0.00548 (0.00012)	2.90660e-05
	Size Prop.	0.79990 (0.00483)	0.00529 (0.00009)	2.31132e-05
	Full	0.80018 (0.00489)	0.00525 (0.00009)	2.36726e-05
0.9	Prop.	0.90017 (0.00286)	0.00321 (0.00008)	8.14862e-06
	Size Prop.	0.90013 (0.00297)	0.00318 (0.00008)	8.76257e-06
	Full	0.90040 (0.00292)	0.00312 (0.00008)	8.60114e-06
0.99	Prop.	0.98994 (0.00038)	0.00039 (0.00001)	1.45292e-07
	Size Prop.	0.98992 (0.00042)	0.00041 (0.00002)	1.77848e-07
	Full	0.98997 (0.00037)	0.00039 (0.00001)	1.37289e-07

subjects from the first pattern only, and for various split samples.

To examine the choice of an AR(1) covariance structure, Table A.11.22 shows three model selection criteria to compare different error covariance structures. Changing from independence structure ($R = \sigma^2 I$) to compound-symmetry ($R = \sigma^2 I$) the criteria decrease with a large amount, and the same when changing to AR(1). The step to an unstructured covariance does not make a big difference (considering that the

Table A.10.19: Simulation study. Estimating σ^2 and its standard deviation. The mean (standard deviation) of the 100 replications are given together with mean squared errors for $\rho = 0.01, 0.2, 0.5, 0.8, 0.9, 0.99$ using proportional and size-proportional weights comparing with the full likelihood results.

ρ_0	method	mean($\hat{\sigma}^2$) (s.e.)	mean(s.e.($\hat{\sigma}^2$)) (s.e.)	MSE
0.01	Prop.	1.99964 (0.02960)	0.02981 (0.00049)	8.67280e-04
	Size Prop.	2.00165 (0.02836)	0.02834 (0.00040)	7.98842e-04
	Full	2.00167 (0.02832)	0.02832 (0.00040)	7.97002e-04
0.2	Prop.	2.00581 (0.02907)	0.03093 (0.00055)	8.70077e-04
	Size Prop.	2.00484 (0.02778)	0.02936 (0.00044)	7.87298e-04
	Full	2.00473 (0.02772)	0.02933 (0.00044)	7.83248e-04
0.5	Prop.	1.99783 (0.03860)	0.03638 (0.00097)	1.47960e-03
	Size Prop.	1.99890 (0.03747)	0.03488 (0.00085)	1.39116e-03
	Full	1.99897 (0.03748)	0.03481 (0.00085)	1.39152e-03
0.8	Prop.	2.00013 (0.04900)	0.05002 (0.00166)	2.37744e-03
	Size Prop.	2.00136 (0.04423)	0.04930 (0.00137)	1.93881e-03
	Full	2.00101 (0.04569)	0.04880 (0.00142)	2.06754e-03
0.9	Prop.	2.00122 (0.05767)	0.05872 (0.00196)	3.29407e-03
	Size Prop.	2.00089 (0.06037)	0.05915 (0.00230)	3.60829e-03
	Full	2.00115 (0.05876)	0.05793 (0.00198)	3.41986e-03
0.99	Prop.	1.99683 (0.06941)	0.07117 (0.00254)	4.77911e-03
	Size Prop.	1.99527 (0.07598)	0.07484 (0.00344)	5.73813e-03
	Full	1.99641 (0.06940)	0.07093 (0.00253)	4.78099e-03

unstructured covariance would have 21 parameters to estimate compared to 2 parameters in the AR(1) model). Therefore, AR(1) seems to be a good choice.

The 95% confidence intervals, accompanying (4.63), are presented in Figure A.11.25. In order to give more insight in these results, Figure A.11.26 shows the 95% confidence interval in each split, comparing with the full sample splits (the horizontal dashed line in the figure).

Table A.10.20: Simulation study. The computation time for a sample with $n = 10$ and $c = 1e+02, 1e+03, 1e+04, 5e+04, 1e+05, 3e+05, 5e+05, 7e+05, 9e+05, 1e+06$. The closed form solution is obtained by implementing the results of this paper in R, and the numerical solution is obtained using PROC MIXED in SAS to estimate a repeated measurement model with AR(1) covariance structure.

time (s)	1e+02	1e+03	1e+04	5e+04	1e+05	3e+05	5e+05	7e+05	9e+05	1e+06
Closed form	0.00	0.00	0.03	0.23	0.34	1.45	2.07	3.37	4.40	4.89
Numerical	0.08	0.13	1.04	10.45	34.74	268.96	770.74	1611.43	2724.31	3399.47

The 95% confidence intervals, accompanying (4.64), are presented in Figure A.11.27. Figure A.11.28 shows the 95% confidence intervals for the parameter estimates in each split comparing with the full sample estimate (the horizontal dashed-like in the figure.)

A.12 Fieller's method and delta method

Here, the Fieller's method to construct a confidence interval for (5.9) as well as the Delta method are discussed. The ratio which we require a confidence interval for is:

$$n_f = \frac{\hat{\sigma}^2}{\hat{\tau}\varepsilon}.$$

Suppose n_1 is a small-feasible sub-sampling size chosen to estimate the parameters in the model (e.g., $n_1 = 5$). From Molenberghs et al. (2011), one finds:

Table A.11.21: PANSS data. Number of clusters in each trial for each cluster pattern.

n	Pattern	Trial					Total
		FIN-1	FRA-3	INT-2	INT-3	INT-7	
*	*	17	8	71	43	3	142
2	*	0	0	2	0	1	3
*	*	0	0	1	0	0	1
*	*	8	4	83	41	7	143
3	*	0	0	2	0	0	2
*	*	1	0	3	1	0	5
*	*	11	0	85	66	5	167
*	*	0	0	1	0	1	2
4	*	0	0	1	0	0	1
*	*	0	0	3	0	0	3
*	*	0	4	1	0	0	5
*	*	0	1	0	0	0	1
*	*	0	0	0	0	1	1
*	*	58	0	85	35	6	184
*	*	0	0	8	0	1	9
*	*	0	0	6	0	0	6
5	*	0	0	8	0	0	8
*	*	0	0	3	0	2	5
*	*	0	0	1	0	0	1
*	*	0	44	0	0	0	44
*	*	0	1	0	0	0	1
*	*	0	0	986	240	74	1300
*	*	0	0	1	0	0	1
6	*	0	0	1	0	0	1
*	*	0	0	1	0	0	1
*	*	0	0	2	0	0	2

$$\begin{aligned}
 \text{Var} \left(\begin{pmatrix} \widehat{\sigma^2} \\ \widehat{\tau\varepsilon} \end{pmatrix} \right) &= \\
 \frac{2\sigma^4}{Nn_1(n_1-1)} \left(\begin{array}{cc} n_1 & -\varepsilon \\ -\varepsilon & \varepsilon^2 \frac{\sigma^4 + 2(n_1-1)\tau\sigma^2 + n_1(n_1-1)\tau^2}{\sigma^4} \end{array} \right) \\
 &= \begin{pmatrix} s_{11} & s_{12} \\ s_{12} & s_{22} \end{pmatrix}. \quad (\text{A.12.1})
 \end{aligned}$$

Table A.11.22: PANSS data. Comparing different error covariance structures using three model comparison criteria for model (4.63) (residual log-likelihood value; AIC; BIC). Three R structures: Ind. : independence structure ($R = \sigma^2 I$), CS: compound-symmetry structure ($R = \sigma^2 I + dJ$), AR(1): AR(1) structure ($R_{ij} = \sigma^2 \rho^{|i-j|}$), UN: unstructured ($R_{ij} = \sigma_{ij}^2$).

Model	-2 Res.log.lik.	AIC	BIC
Unstructured	80005.1	80047.1	80164.1
AR(1)	80522.6	80526.6	80537.8
Compound symm.	82683.1	82687.1	82698.3
Independence	89546.1	89548.1	89553.7

The Fieller's confidence interval for (5.9) can be calculated following these steps.

$$\begin{aligned}
 C_1^2 &= \frac{s_{11}}{\widehat{\sigma}^2}, \\
 C_2^2 &= \frac{s_{22}}{(\varepsilon\widehat{\tau})^2}, \\
 r &= \frac{s_{12}}{\sqrt{s_{11}s_{22}}}, \\
 A &= C_1^2 + C_2^2 - 2rC_1C_2, \\
 B &= t^2 C_1^2 C_2^2 (1 - r^2), \\
 L &= \frac{\widehat{\sigma}^2}{\varepsilon\widehat{\tau}} \frac{1 - z_{\alpha/2}^2 r C_1 C_2 - z_{\alpha/2} \sqrt{A - B}}{1 - z_{\alpha/2}^2 C_2^2}, \\
 U &= \frac{\widehat{\sigma}^2}{\varepsilon\widehat{\tau}} \frac{1 - z_{\alpha/2}^2 r C_1 C_2 + z_{\alpha/2} \sqrt{A - B}}{1 - z_{\alpha/2}^2 C_2^2}.
 \end{aligned} \tag{A.12.2}$$

One may take $n_f = \max\{L, U\}$. Of course, in case were $z_{\alpha/2}^2 C_2^2 < 1$, there would be no finite interval. As it was mentioned, one may also use

the Delta method as follows:

$$\text{Var}\left(\frac{\widehat{\sigma}^2}{\varepsilon \widehat{\tau}}\right) \approx \frac{1}{\varepsilon^2 \widehat{\tau}^2} \left(s_{11} - 2\frac{\sigma^2}{\tau} s_{12} + \frac{\sigma^4}{\tau^2} s_{22} \right). \quad (\text{A.12.3})$$

A.13 Random vertical data splitting for compound-symmetry structure

Assume a single cluster of size N with multivariate normal distribution and compound-symmetry structure for its covariance matrix, see Section 5.2.2. Suppose we take M_0 sub-samples of size n_0 from this cluster. Following Hoffman et al. (2001), the parameter μ should be estimated within each sub-sample, $\widehat{\mu}^{(m)}$ ($m = 1, \dots, M_0$) and then the overall estimate can be obtained by averaging these estimates. Furthermore, one needs the within and between sub-samples variabilities to compute the overall variability, see (5.17).

Within each sub-sample the variance of $\widehat{\mu}^{(m)}$ can be computed using the variance formula for a mean estimator in CS-multivariate normal Molenberghs et al. (2011) :

$$S_W = \frac{\sigma^2}{n_0} [1 + (n_0 - 1)\rho]. \quad (\text{A.13.1})$$

Estimating the between variability requires computing $E\left\{(\widehat{\mu}^{(m)} - \bar{\mu})^2\right\}$, where $\bar{\mu}$ is the average of $\widehat{\mu}^{(m)}$'s ($m = 1, \dots, M_0$). Set S_m as the index

of members of sub-sample m and $S_{m'}$ the rest of the sample, then,

$$\hat{\mu}^{(m)} - \bar{\mu} = \frac{1}{n_0} \left\{ \left(1 - \frac{1}{M_0}\right) \sum_{i \in S_m} y_i - \frac{1}{M_0} \sum_{m=1}^{M_0} \sum_{i \in S_{m'}} y_i \right\}.$$

Therefore,

$$E \left\{ (\hat{\mu}^{(m)} - \bar{\mu})^2 \right\} = \frac{1}{n_0} (T_1 + T_2 + T_3 + T_4), \quad (A.13.2)$$

where,

$$\begin{cases} T_1 = \left(1 - \frac{1}{M_0}\right) E \left[\sum_{i \in S_m} y_i \right]^2 \\ T_2 = \frac{1}{M_0^2} (M_0 - 1) E \left[\sum_{i \in S_m} y_i \right]^2 \\ T_3 = -2 \left(1 - \frac{1}{M_0}\right) \frac{1}{M_0} (M_0 - 1) E \left\{ \left(\sum_{i \in S_{m'}} y_i\right) \left(\sum_{i' \in S_{m'}} y_{i'}\right) \right\} \\ T_4 = 2 \frac{1}{M_0} \frac{(M_0 - 1)(M_0 - 2)}{2} E \left\{ \left(\sum_{i \in S_m} y_i\right) \left(\sum_{i' \in S_{m'}} y_{i'}\right) \right\}. \end{cases} \quad (A.13.3)$$

From (A.13.3) one may find,

$$\begin{cases} T_1 + T_2 = \frac{M_0 - 1}{M_0} n_0 \sigma^2 [1 + (n_0 - 1)\rho] \\ T_3 + T_4 = -\frac{M_0 - 1}{M_0} \frac{\sigma^2 n_0^2}{N} [1 + (N_1)\rho]. \end{cases} \quad (A.13.4)$$

Therefore, the between variability can be computed as follows,

$$\begin{aligned} S_B &= E \left\{ (\hat{\mu}^{(m)} - \bar{\mu})^2 \right\} = \\ &\quad \frac{M_0 - 1}{M_0} \left[\frac{1 + (n_0 - 1)\rho}{n_0} - \frac{1 + (N_1)\rho}{N} \right]. \end{aligned} \quad (A.13.5)$$

Using (A.13.1) and (A.13.5), the total variability can be computed as follows,

$$S_T = \frac{1}{M_0} \sigma^2 \frac{1 + (n_0 - 1)\rho}{n_0} + \frac{M_0 - 1}{M_0} \sigma^2 \frac{1 + (N - 1)\rho}{N} \quad (\text{A.13.6})$$

Comparing the variance in (A.13.6) with the variance when estimating μ using the full sample would give,

$$\text{ARE} = \frac{M_0 - 1}{M_0} + \frac{1}{M_0} \frac{N}{n_0} \frac{1 + (n_0 - 1)\rho}{1 + (N - 1)\rho} \quad (\text{A.13.7})$$

For example, if sub-sampling is done only once ($M_0 = 1$), then,

$$\text{ARE} = \frac{N}{n_0} \frac{1 + (n_0 - 1)\rho}{1 + (N - 1)\rho}, \quad (\text{A.13.8})$$

The same calculation is possible for $M_0 = 2$,

$$\text{ARE} = \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{N}{n_0} \frac{1 + (n_0 - 1)\rho}{1 + (N - 1)\rho}. \quad (\text{A.13.9})$$

By considering the desired ARE as $1 + \epsilon$, one may find n_0 .

A.14 Combination rule for *p*-values for MI

The Kruskal-Wallis test statistic asymptotically follows a χ^2 distribution. Therefore, in order to find the combined *p*-value, we may follow the procedure proposed by Li et al. (1991). More details can be found in Rubin (2004) and Enders (2010). The combination is done using `micombine.chisquare` in package `miceadds` in R, Robitzsch et al.

(2016).

- **Averaging.** Compute the test statistic for each imputed data and take their average: $\bar{\chi^2} = \frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^M \chi_m^2$.
- **Relative variance increase.** $r = \left(1 + \frac{1}{M}\right) \frac{\sum_{m=1}^M (\sqrt{\chi_m^2} - \sqrt{\bar{\chi^2}})^2}{M-1}$
- **Test statistic.** $D = \frac{\bar{\chi^2} - \frac{M+1}{M-1} r}{1+r}$, where κ is the degrees-of-freedom of the χ_m^2 . For a χ^2 -test of independence, it is $(k_1-1)(k_2-1)$ where k_1 and k_2 are the number of levels of two categorical variables. Take five diagnosis groups and variable Eye with two levels, then $\kappa = (5-1)(2-1) = 4$. For the Kruskal-Wallis test, κ is the number of groups minus 1. So, when comparing values of a continuous variable among three types of diagnosis, $\kappa = 2$. When this comparison is done for all five types, $\kappa = 4$.
- **Computing p-value.** $p\text{-value} = P(F_{\kappa,\nu} > D)$, where F is the F -distribution and $\nu = \kappa^{-3/M}(M-1) \left(1 + \frac{1}{r}\right)^2$

A.15 The surrogate model

The model takes the form:

$$\begin{cases} S_{ij} = \mu_S + m_{S_i} + (\alpha + a_i)Z_{ij} + \varepsilon_{S_{ij}}, \\ T_{ij} = \mu_T + m_{T_i} + (\beta + b_i)Z_{ij} + \varepsilon_{T_{ij}}, \end{cases} \quad (\text{A.15.1})$$

where S_{ij} and T_{ij} are the surrogate and true endpoints, and Z_{ij} is the treatment indicator (1 for active; 0 for placebo), respectively. Index i

refers to the trial and j to the subject. Further, μ_S and μ_T are fixed intercepts and m_{S_i} and m_{T_i} are random intercepts, for surrogate and true endpoint, respectively. The fixed treatment effects are α (for S) and β (for T), and the centre-specific treatment effects are a_i (for S) and b_i (for T). Random intercepts and slopes are assumed to follow $(m_{S_i}, m_{T_i}, a_i, b_i)' \sim N(0, D)$, where

$$D = \begin{pmatrix} d_{SS} & & & \\ d_{ST} & d_{TT} & & \\ d_{Sa} & d_{Ta} & d_{aa} & \\ d_{Sb} & d_{Tb} & d_{ab} & d_{bb} \end{pmatrix}. \quad (\text{A.15.2})$$

Furthermore, for the error terms,

$$\begin{pmatrix} \varepsilon_{S_{ij}} \\ \varepsilon_{T_{ij}} \end{pmatrix} \sim N(0, \Sigma), \quad \Sigma = \begin{pmatrix} \sigma_{SS} & & \\ \sigma_{ST} & \sigma_{TT} & \end{pmatrix}. \quad (\text{A.15.3})$$

The parameters of interest for the surrogate evaluation are trial- and individual-level coefficients of determination, R_{trial}^2 and R_{indiv}^2 , respectively:

$$R_{\text{trial}}^2 = \frac{1}{d_{ab}} \begin{pmatrix} d_{Sb} \\ d_{ab} \end{pmatrix}' \begin{pmatrix} d_{SS} & d_{Sa} \\ d_{Sa} & d_{aa} \end{pmatrix}^{-1} \begin{pmatrix} d_{Sb} \\ d_{ab} \end{pmatrix}, \quad (\text{A.15.4})$$

$$R_{\text{indiv}}^2 = \frac{\sigma_{ST}^2}{\sigma_{SS}\sigma_{TT}}.$$

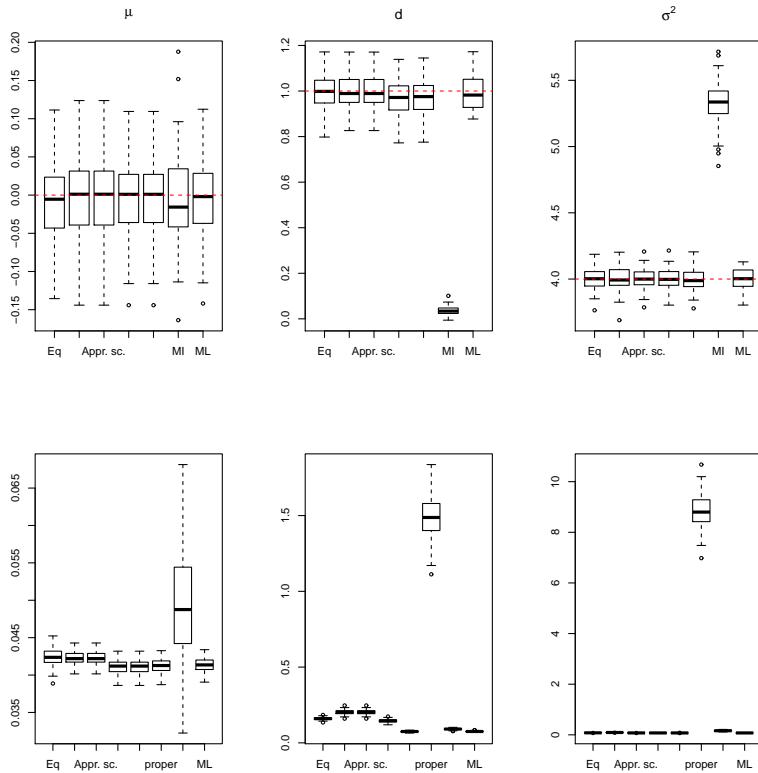


Figure A.7.13: Second simulation study. Estimated CS parameters (first row) and their standard error (second row) using sample splitting, MI-MLE, and MLE.

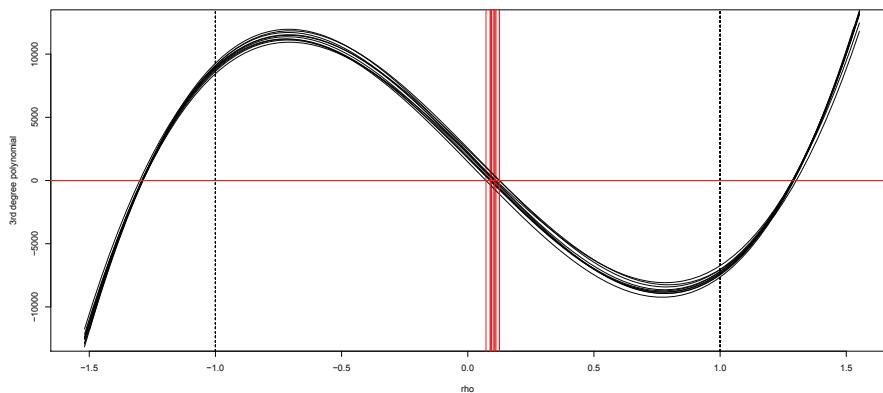


Figure A.9.14: The third degree polynomial in (A.9.23) for 10 different generated data. The red vertical line shows $\hat{\rho}$.

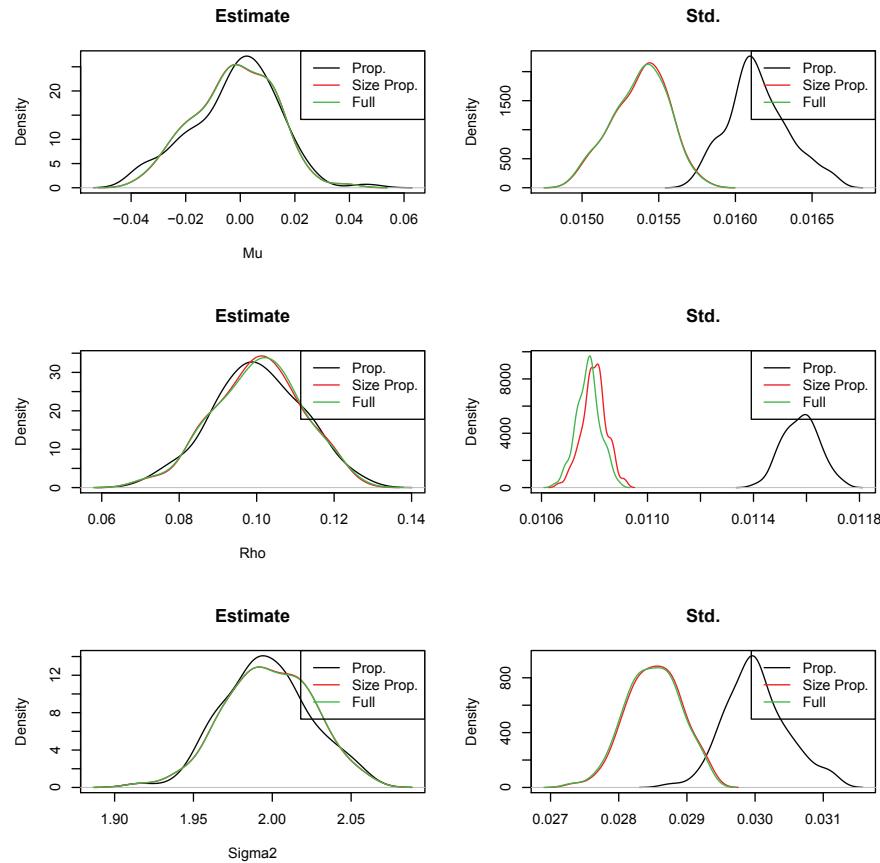


Figure A.10.15: Comparing proportional and size-proportional weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.1$.

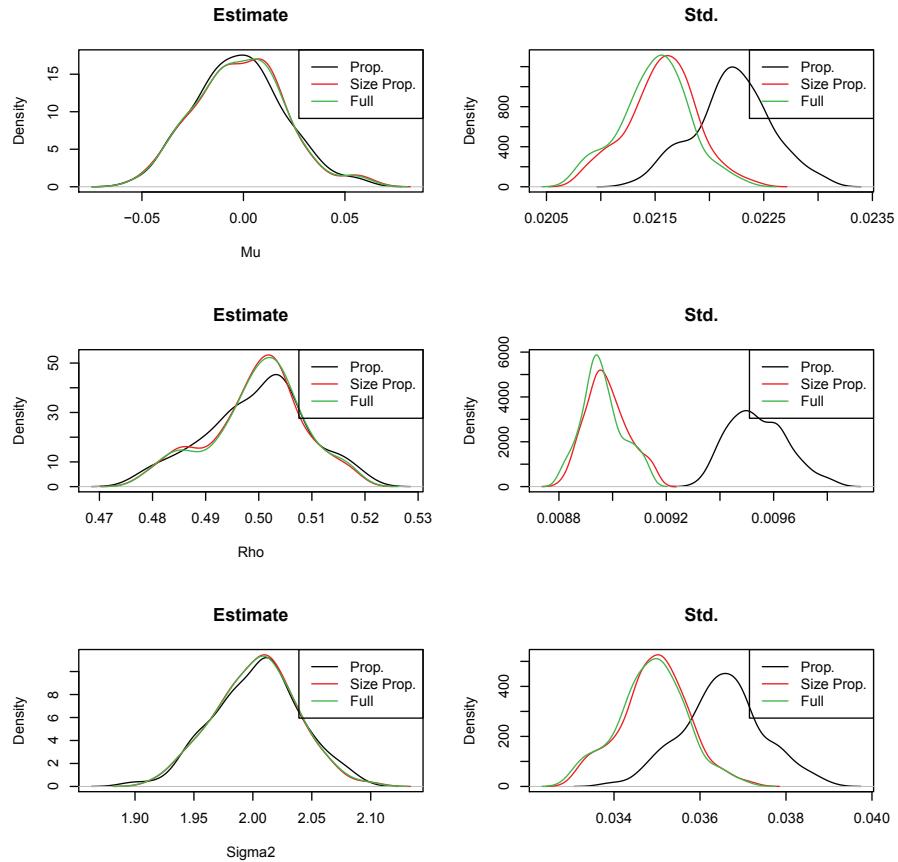


Figure A.10.16: Comparing proportional and size-proportional weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.5$.

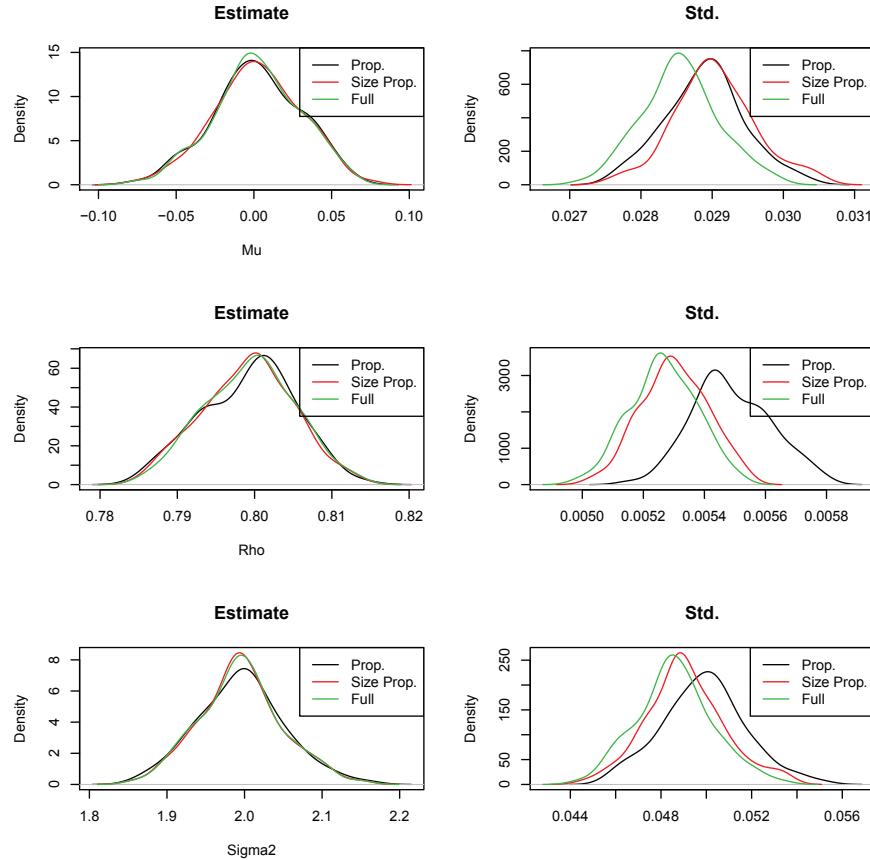


Figure A.10.17: Comparing proportional and size-proportional weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.8$.

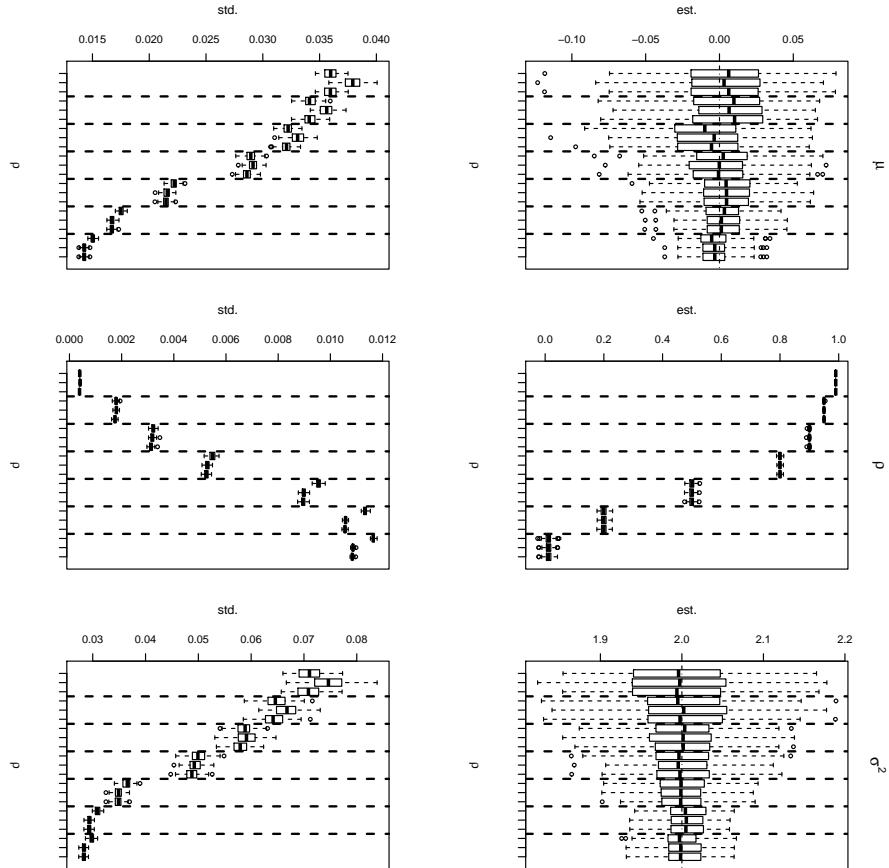


Figure A.10.18: Simulation study. Boxplots comparing proportional and size-proportional weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.99, 0.95, 0.9, 0.8, 0.5, 0.2, 0.01$. In every section of the boxplots (which are separated by dashed lines) the first out of three represents the proportional weights, the middle of is size-proportional weights and the one on the right shows the results for the full likelihood. The first row presents the estimates while the second row shows the standard deviations of these estimates.

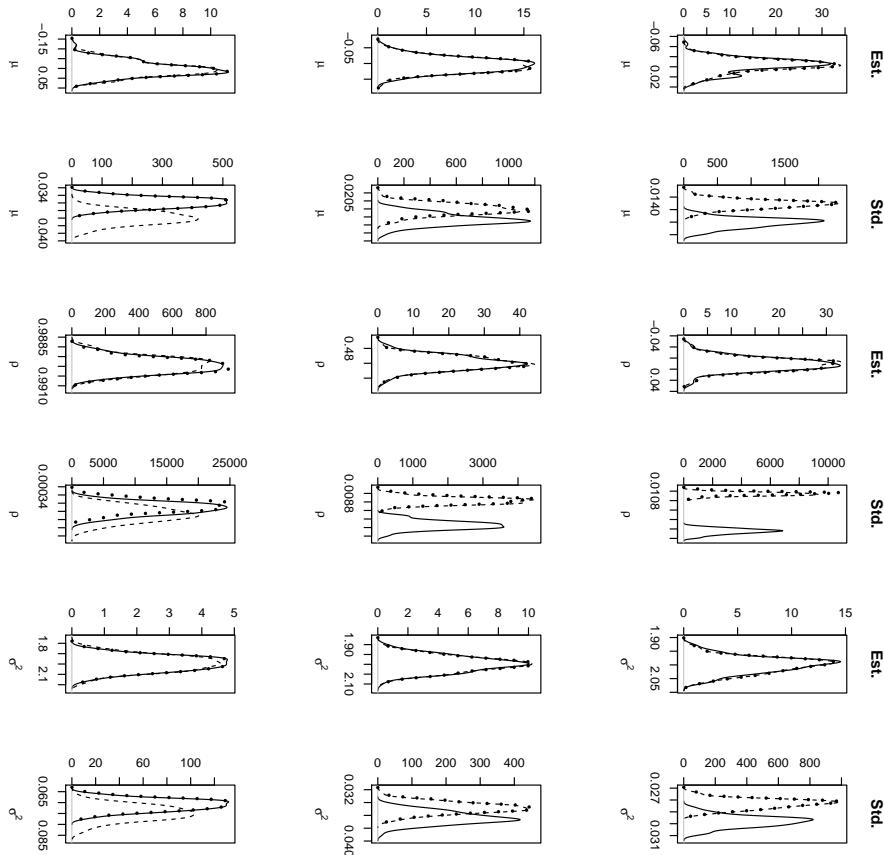


Figure A.10.19: Simulation study. Comparing proportional, size-proportional and full likelihood results via their empirical density for the 100 replications. In all of the figures $\mu = 0$ and $\sigma^2 = 2$. The first row is for $\rho = 0.01$, the middle one is for $\rho = 0.5$ and last one corresponds to $\rho = 0.99$. In each figure the ticked dotted line corresponds to full likelihood, the dashed line is for size-proportional weights and the solid line is for proportional weights.

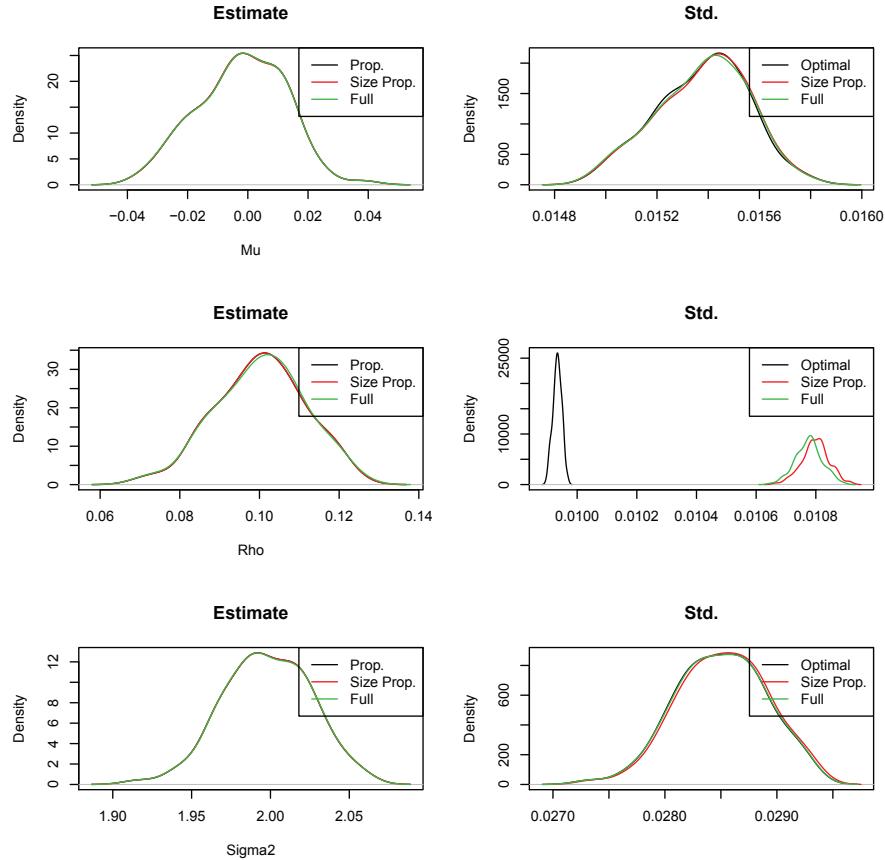


Figure A.10.20: Comparing iterated optimal and size-proportional weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.1$.

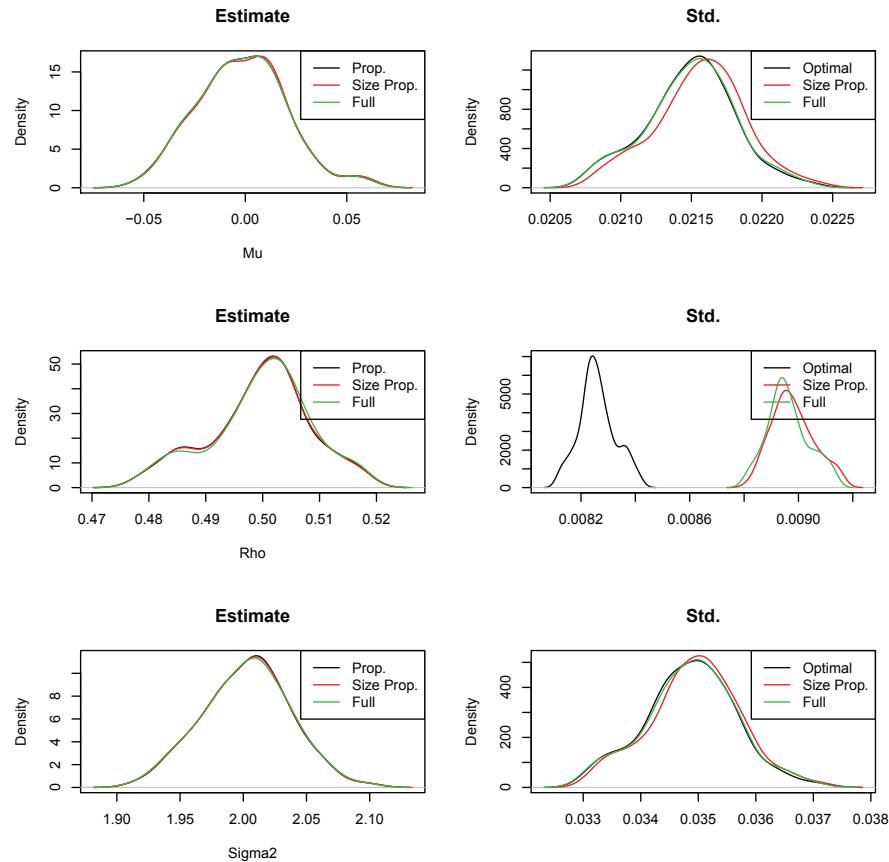


Figure A.10.21: Comparing iterated optimal and size-proportioanl weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.5$.

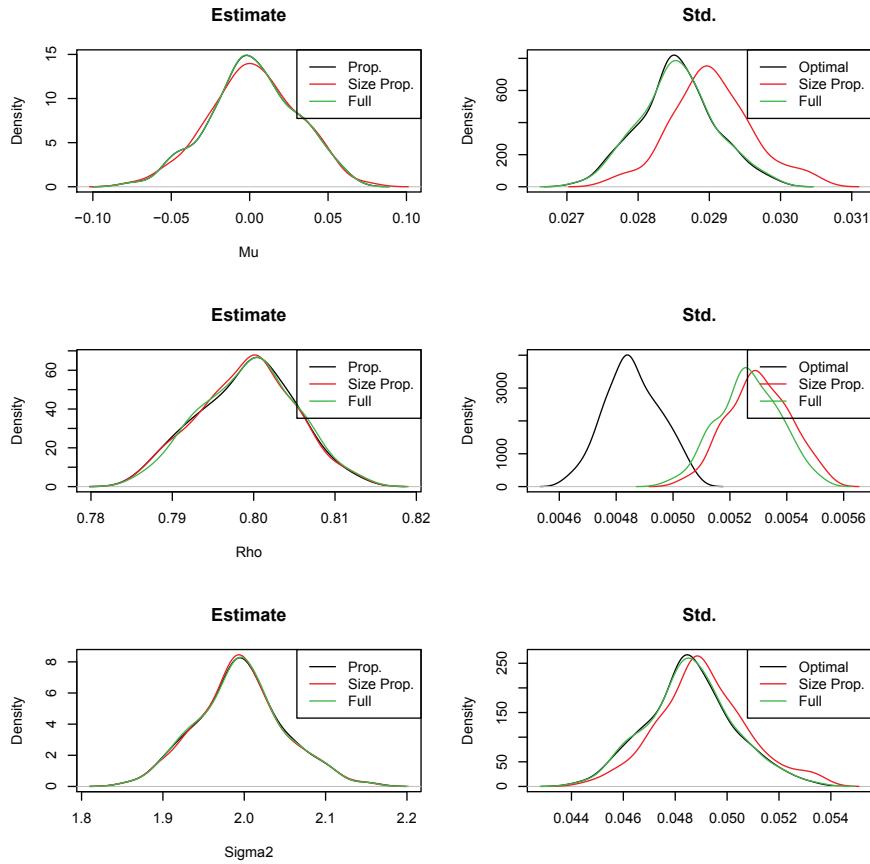


Figure A.10.22: Comparing iterated optimal and size-proportional weights with full likelihood for 100 replications with $\mu = 0$, $\sigma^2 = 2$ and $\rho = 0.8$.

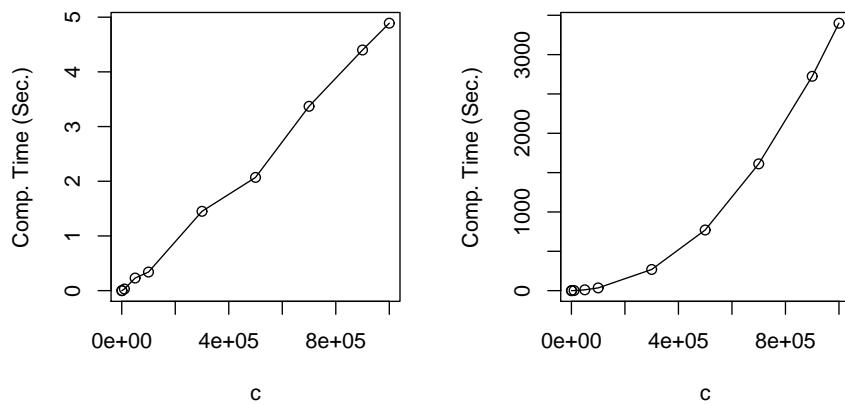


Figure A.10.23: Simulation study. Comparing computation time using closed form (left) and numerical (right) solutions. The horizontal axis shows number of clusters (c) and the vertical axis shows the computation time in seconds.

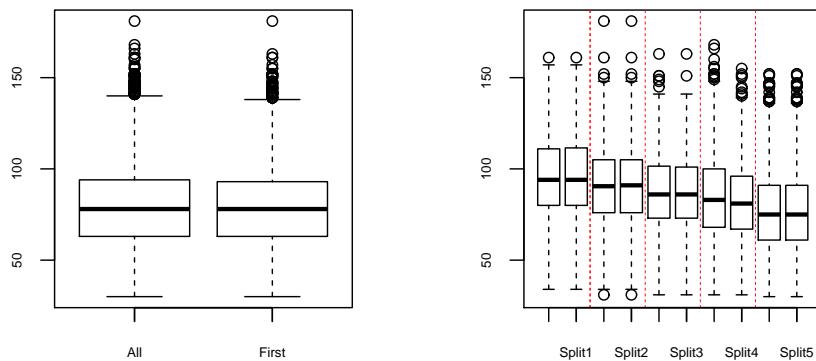


Figure A.11.24: PANSS data. Boxplots for the entire set of data, for the subject from the first pattern only, and for various split samples.

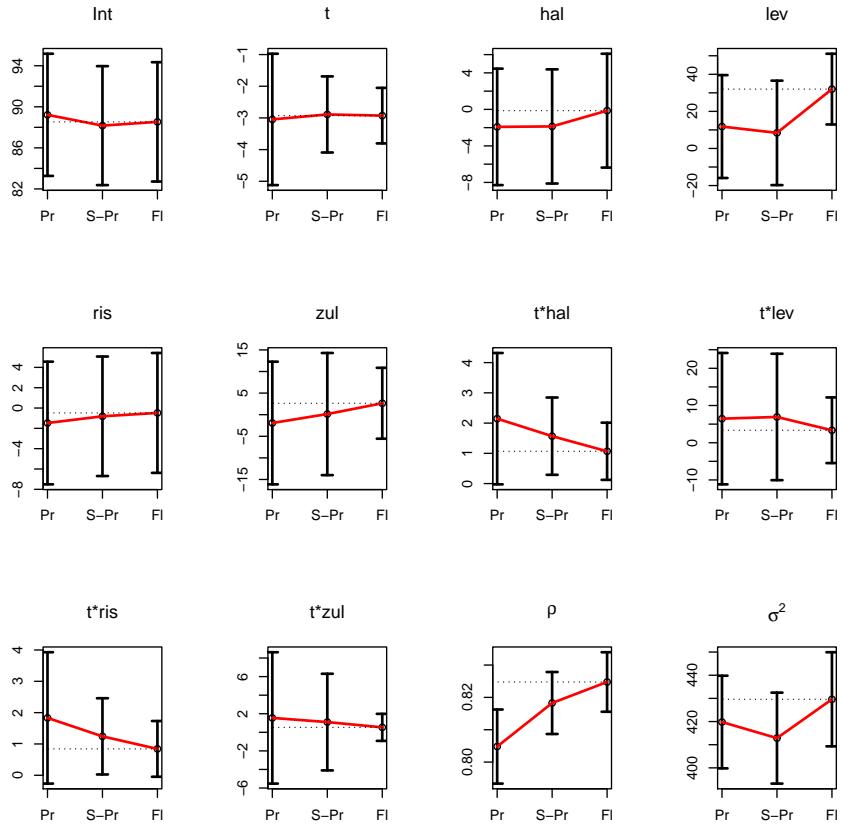


Figure A.11.25: PANSS data. 95% confidence intervals for fixed effects and variance components estimates and the standard deviations of these estimates using sample splitting, combined with proportional (Pr - first) and size-proportional (S-Pr - second) weights, and full likelihood (Fl - third). The dashed horizontal line shows the full likelihood estimate. The model used in here is without trial effect (4.63).

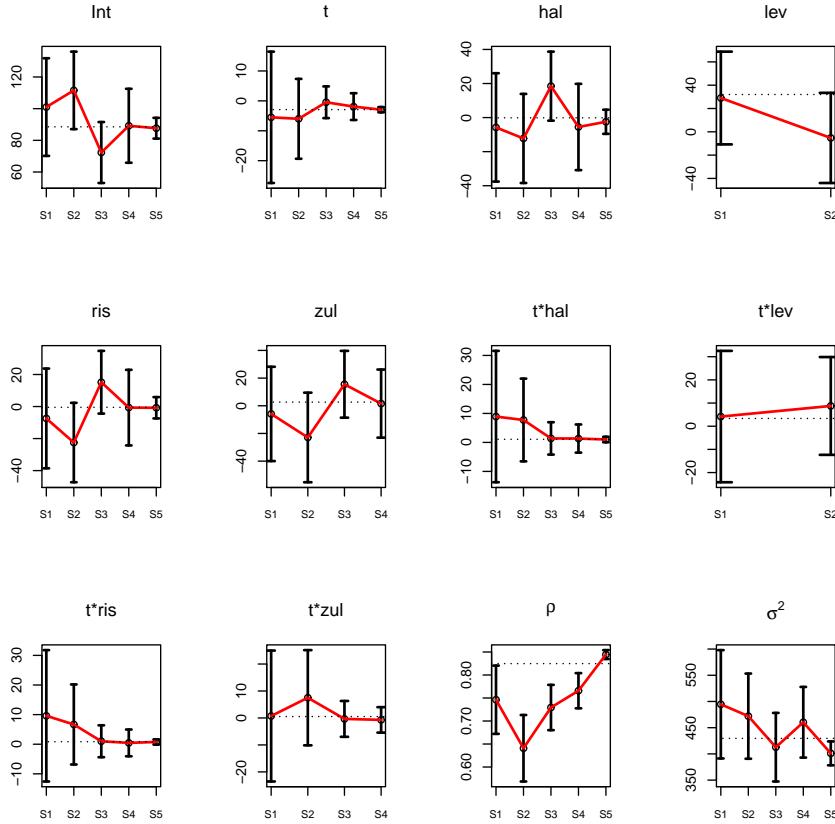


Figure A.11.26: PANSS data. 95% confidence intervals for fixed effects and variance components estimates and the standard deviations of these estimates within each split. The dashed horizontal line shows the full likelihood estimate. The model used in here is without trial effect (4.64).

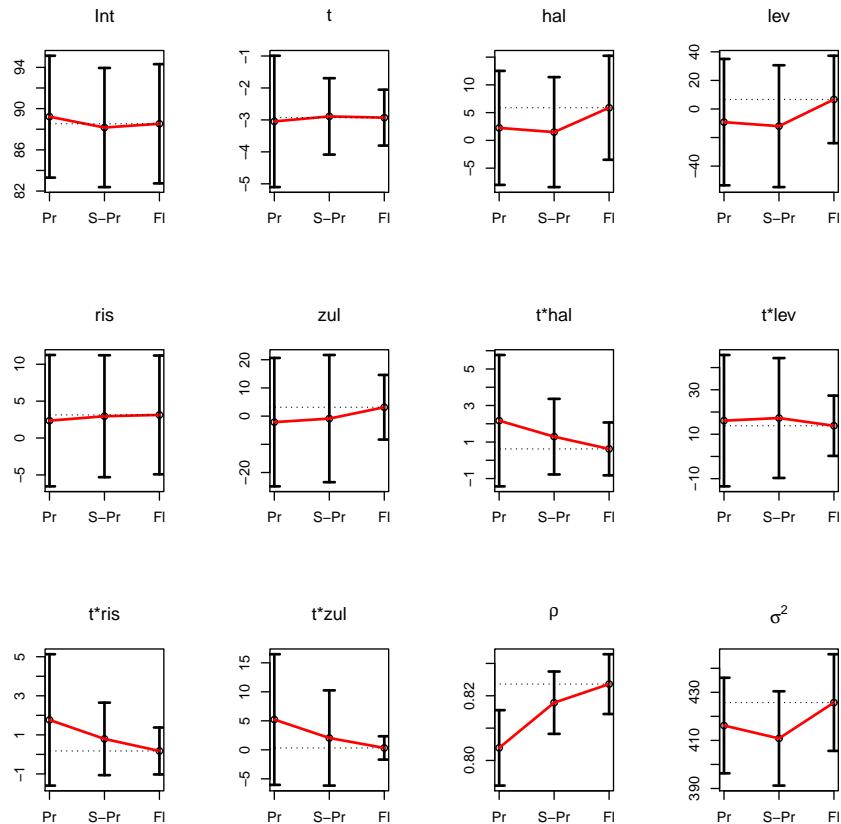


Figure A.11.27: PANSS data. 95% confidence intervals for fixed effects and variance components estimates and the standard deviations of these estimates using sample splitting, combined with proportional (Pr - first) and size-proportional (S-Pr - second) weights, and full likelihood (Fl - third). The dashed horizontal line shows the full likelihood estimate. The model used in here is with trial effect (4.64).

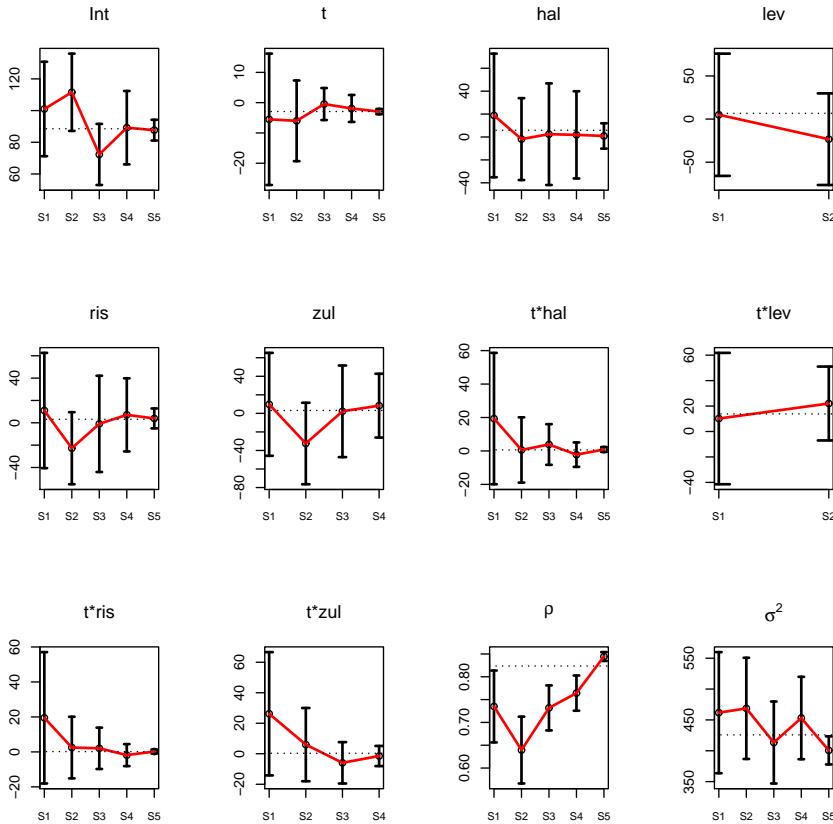


Figure A.11.28: PANSS data. 95% confidence intervals for fixed effects and variance components estimates and the standard deviations of these estimates within each split. The dashed horizontal line shows the full likelihood estimate. The model used in here is with trial effect (4.64).